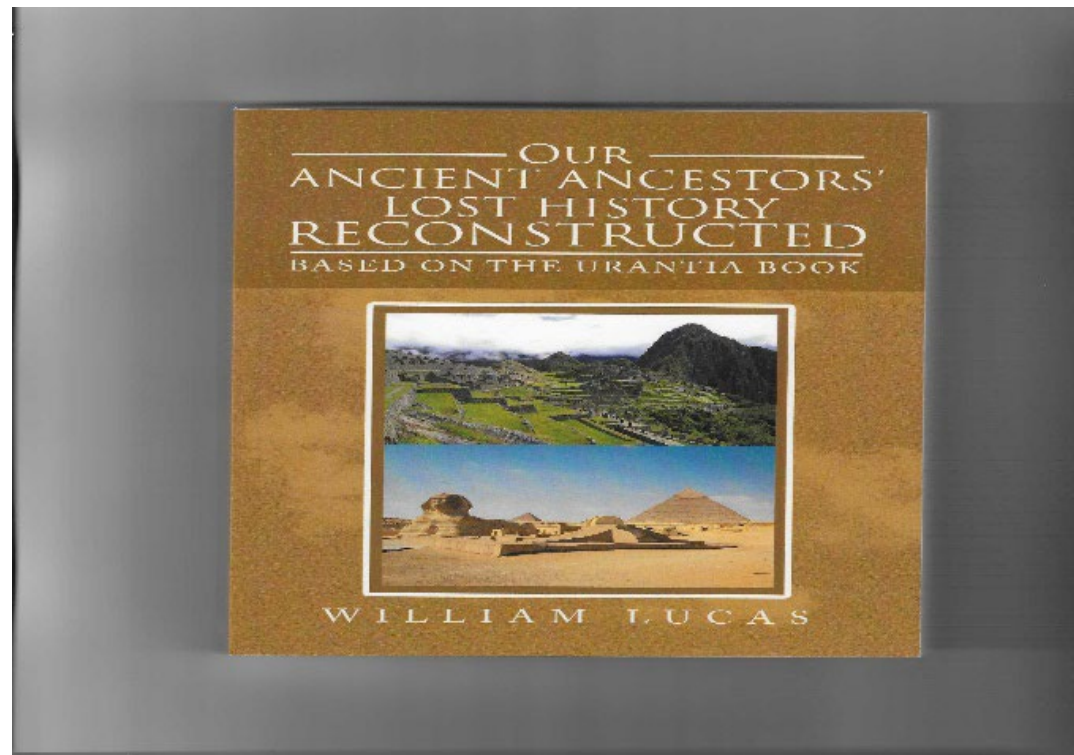


Our Ancient Ancestors Lost History Reconstructed

Based on The Urantia Book



William Lucas

Dedication

When I first read the entire Urantia book in 1997, I was amazed and shocked that this type of knowledge was on our planet, and so few people knew about it. I've been searching for this knowledge all my adult life. At the time I found The Urantia Book I was 60 years old.

After reading the book I could not live in peace without sharing this information with my fellow humans. I had no previous training as a writer; so, I had to teach myself how to write books. It took several years to understand the basics of The Urantia Book 2,097 pages enough to write a book about. After self-publishing two books, I dedicated this book, "Our Ancient Ancestors' Lost History Reconstructed" to the seekers of the world who have the understanding if we fulfill God's plan for our lives, we can create a beautiful world.

Acknowledgments

I want to thank Fran Householder of Unity of Bon Air for the great job she did proofreading my manuscript. I am grateful to my sister Dolores for her support and encouragement even though the subject of my book is a difficult one, and I also like to thank her daughters for their support, I am also grateful to my cousin Kathy for her kindness and willingness to listen, mainly when there was so few people I could converse and share.

Table of contents

Introduction.....	8
They Brought Sin to Earth.....	8
Chapter 1: And There Was Light.....	11
The Paradise Creator Sons	11
The Distortion of the Bible.....	13
The Dawn of Life.....	14
The Dawn of Man.....	17
The Primates.....	19
The First Human Beings.....	20
Evolution of the Human Mind.....	21
The Survival of Andon and Fonta.....	28
Sleeping Survivors.....	31
Paradise Arrival.....	32
Chapter 2: When Higher Beings Came to Earth.....	33
The Transporters.....	33
Origin of the Color Race.....	35
Higher Worlds.....	40
Misfortunes of Caligastia.....	49
Chapter 3: The Planetary Rebellion.....	51
Lucifer's Manifesto.....	51
The Seven Crucial Years.....	53

The Caligastia 100 after the Rebellion.....	54
The Struggle to Civilization.....	58
Factors in Social Progression.....	59
Evolution of Cultural.....	62
Chapter 4: The Land of Nod.....	65
The Tower of Babel.....	67
The Nodites Center of Civilization.....	72
Chapter 5: The Garden of Eden.....	75
The Garden Site.....	78
Establishing the Garden.....	78
The Garden Home.....	79
The Tree of Life.....	79
Adam and Eve.....	79
The arrival of Adam and Eve.....	82
Home Life of Adam and Eve.....	86
The Legend of Creation.....	88
The Default of Adam and Eve.....	89
Caligastia's (the devil) Plot.....	90
The Temptation of Eve.....	90
Chapter 6: The Second Garden.....	96
Cain and Abel.....	97
Life in Mesopotamia.....	98
Death of Adam and Eve.....	100
Survival of Adam and Eve.....	101
The Mansion Worlds.....	102
Jerusem Citizenship.....	107
Ascending Mortals.....	108
Chapter 7: Adamson and Ratta.....	110
Racial and Culture Distribution.....	112
The Andites Race.....	118
The Sumerians, Last of the Andites (Aryans).....	118

Chapter 8: Machiventa Melchizedek	121
The Sage of Salem	122
The Salem Religion	123
The Selecting of Abraham	124
The Melchizedek Covenant with Abraham	126
The Departure of Melchizedek	127
Chapter 9: Yahweh God of the Hebrews	130
Deity Concept Among the Semites	130
The Matchless Moses	133
The Proclamation of Yahweh	134
The teachings of Moses	135
Chapter 10: Jesus the Christ	139
Bestowals of Christ Michael	140
Sacrificial Lamb	142
John the Baptist	144
John Becomes a Nazarite	144
The Baptism of Jesus	146
The Forty Days	147
The Heart of the People	149
The Analysis of Jonah	151
The Discourse on True Religion	154
The Second Discourse on True Religion	156
Chapter 11: The Wedding at Cana	160
God's Wrath	162
Purpose of Affliction	163
Resurrection of Lazarus	164
What Became of Lazarus	166
Chapter 12: The Last Days of Jesus	167
Early Home Life	168
Judas and the Chief Priest	169
After the Noontime Meal	172

On The Way to the Last Supper.....	173
Beginning the Supper.....	173
Washing the Apostles Feet.....	174
The Last Word to the Betrayer.....	176
Establishing the Remembrance Supper.....	176
The Last Group Pray.....	177
Alone In Gethsemane.....	179
The Betrayal and Arrest of Jesus.....	180
The Father's Will.....	180
On The Way to the High Priest Palace.....	184
Examination by Annas.....	185
Peter in the Courtyard the Court.....	187
Before the Sanhedrin Court.....	187
The Private Examination by Pilate.....	191
Jesus before Herod.....	193
Pilate Last Interview.....	194
The Hour of Humiliation.....	189
Second Meeting of the Court.....	190
Pilate Tragic Surrender.....	197
Just Before the Crucifixion.....	197
The End of Judas Iscariot.....	198
Chapter 13: The Burial of Jesus.....	200
Meaning of Death on the Cross.....	203
The Morontia Transit.....	204
Chapter 14: The God Within.....	207
The Origin and Nature of the God Within.....	208
The Mission of the Thought Adjusters.....	210
Adjuster and the Human Will.....	212
The Seven Psychic Circles.....	214
Summary.....	216
The Reason for Being.....	216

Additional Reading.....	221
Glossary.....	223

Introduction

They Brought Sin to Earth

With the help of a book known as THE URANTIA BOOK, I have solved the enigma I believe of who built the Sphinx and the incredible megalithic structures around the world. First, we must start by realizing Adam and Eve were not the first two people on Earth. You can prove this to yourself by carefully reading the Bible (Genesis 4:8-17) according to these verses it would be impossible for them to have been the first two people on earth one example in those verses Cain is said to be the first person on earth he goes to the Land of Nod find a wife wouldn't his wife's parents have to be older than Cain.

The Urantia Book claims Adam and Eve were celestial beings, they claim Adam and Eve came here 37 thousand years ago as biological up-lifters humanity had reached its natural peak after mutating through the animal kingdom for millions of years. When Adam and Eve came to our planet, The Urantia Book mentioned their bodies were rematerialized. Adam and Eve were commanded to be fruitful and multiply (Genesis 1:28).

After several thousands of years, there were thousands upon thousands of Adam and Eve descendants and they were intellectual giants. They were one of the reasons for the intellectual gap during ancient times. Their descendants went all over the world spreading their genes and helping to civilize humanity; even their offspring were intellectuals. Adam and Eve's descendants were one group of the builders of megalithic structures all over the planet, that is the reason they look the same across the globe. Eventually, their genes waned, and humanity began to level off. But not until great civilizations began to thrive such as the Mayans and Incas. This is a plausible explanation for how after thousands of years their descendants were still building places like Gobekli Tepe.

Humanity has been searching for the reason for his/her existence for thousands of years. Many years ago, in the late 1950s, I recalled reading The Story of Civilization, by the historian Will Durant; even at that time, he mentioned how historians and academia were still puzzled at the sudden civilization of humanity. They said it appeared to have happened overnight. Fifty-plus years later, they are still puzzled over how we came to be civilized. For years, there have been suggestions for the reason for humanity's sudden civilization that seems to fade away with time. One of those suggestions is that celestial beings came to our planet to help civilize humankind. The Western World Bible, Genesis 6:4, states: "There were giants in the earth in those days; and also, after that when the sons of God came in unto the daughters of men, and they bare children unto them some became mighty men that were of old, men of renown." The Sumerians called the sons of God of Genesis 6:4, Anunnaki (those who came from heaven) They were the same beings.

The quote above mentioned there were giants, or Nephilim, on the earth in those days, and after that, the sons of God started having children with the daughters of men. Where did the giants come from? Those giants were unique beings. Who were their original parents? This will also be explained in a later chapter. Those sons of God were from higher worlds, and there were 100 of those sons of God who came to help civilize humanity and were the only corporeal beings. Many more came, but they stayed in another dimension including the one they called Caligastia who came as Prince of this world, Jesus mentioned him in John 16:11 when he said: "The Prince of this world is judged." The 100 could not use the bodies they used on higher worlds on our planet, so bodies were created for them. There were 50 men and 50 women; the Bible often referred to men and women as the sons of God; there is no distinction see Hebrew 12:6-7. Surgeons, from a very advanced universe called Avalon, volunteered to come to our planet. They took DNA according to The Urantia Book, from the most advanced humans on our planet; and with genetic engineering created bodies for those sons of God that were superhumans, bodies made of the dust of the ground (chemical of the earth or DNA), see Genesis 2:7. The Spirit of God breathed the breath of life into those bodies and the sons of God incarnated into them, just as we did before we were born into the world with the help of angels. Because the sons of God's bodies were created with the DNA of humans, they were able to have children with humans. Our evolutionary ancestors called those Higher Beings that created those bodies, Gods. But they started having so many problems with the giants they were ordered to start having children with humans, see Numbers 13:30-33 and Deuteronomy 2:10 and 2:20. Genesis 6:4 says those children they had with humans became men of renown.

Those sons of God were here for thousands of years teaching man the art of living such as the cultivation of crops, domestication of animals, and much more. It was around this time that Lucifer rebelled. Sixty out of 100 of the sons of God rebelled along with Lucifer. This included the one Jesus called the prince of this world, John 16:11 see the Bible, "The prince of this world is judged." In the higher world, this prince is called Caligastia; I will discuss him later. Those sons of God were able to live on earth for an indefinite amount of time, if they ate the fruit of the Tree of Life, and they lived for thousands of years. That is the reason in the Sumerian's cuneiforms, in the Epic of Gilgamesh their King List, those kings were able to live for thousands of years. In this book, you'll learn precisely who those kings were.

Those celestial sons' descendants became men of renown known for thousands of years as Nephilim in ancient times they went around bragging about being the offspring of gods. Not all Nephilim were giants, but all offsprings of the celestial sons of God were known for thousands of years as Nephilim. Those descendants were intellectual giants. After thousands of years, they are the ones who attempted to build The Towers of Babel, the first megalithic structure recorded on Earth.

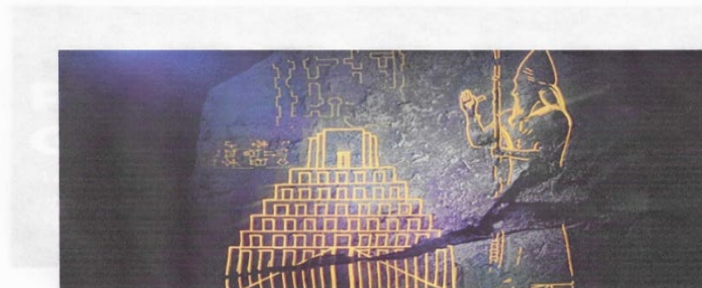
Here is something to ponder. <https://www2.cbn.com/news/us/new-evidence-bibles-tower-babel-was-real> According to Dr. Andrew George, professor of Babylonian at SOAS University of London, an ancient tablet provides the first ever image of the tower of Babel and offers a "very strong piece of evidence that it was a real building."

It is incredible how those descendants of the sons of God referenced in Genesis 6:4 have distorted World History. Some of them consider their race as the master race, but those descendants are of all races, more in some than others. Through the years, some of them caused chaos for humanity, and it appears their time is just about up. They have been hiding their origin from the time the sons of God had children by the daughters of men of Genesis 6:4 in the Bible, about 200 thousand years ago. They are the distant offspring of that union; they are the descendants

of the Anunnaki (those who came from heaven) of the Sumerians. People need to take into consideration the Sumerians were just as much in the dark as people today are. Those strange beings they call Anunnaki (those who came from heaven) were on our planet thousands upon thousands of years before their time. The Book of Enoch called them Watchers and Fallen Angels, to emphasize they were from heaven or higher worlds. Those sons of God having children by the daughters of men was not part of God's plans for humanity; this is when they brought sin to our planet. They became the Aryans and the Sumerians, very advanced people. The descendants of Adam and Eve and the descendants of the sons of God of Genesis 6:4 are the reason for the vast gap in the intellectual makeup of the people of ancient times.



Elongated skull with red hair, as there have been found many in Paracas, Peru



Ancient Babylonian Tablet Provides Compelling Evidence that the Tower of Babel DID Exist.

87

Chapter 1

And There Was Light

Today's astrophysicists assure us there are hundreds of thousands of universes out there. In the Bible Genesis 1:3 states, "And God said: Let there be light, and there was light." Further down in Genesis 1:26, it mentions: "Let us make man in our image, after our likeness." The Urantia Book, which I will describe later, states on paper 21, paragraph 1.

The Paradise Creator Sons

The Creator Sons are the makers and rulers of the local universes of time and space. These universe creators and sovereigns are of dual origins embodying the characteristics of God the Father and God the Son. But each Creator Son is different from every other; each is unique in nature as well as personality; each is the "Only begotten Son" of the perfect deity ideal of his origin. In the vast work of organizing, evolving, and perfecting a local universe, these high Sons always enjoy the sustaining approval of the Universe Father. The relationship of the Creator Sons with their Paradise Father is touching and superlative. No doubt the profound affection of the deity parents for their divine progeny is the wellsprings of that beautiful and well-nigh divine love which even mortal parents bear their children.

These Primary Paradise Sons are personalized as Michaels. As they go forth from Paradise to found their universe, they are known as creator Michaels. When settled in supreme authority, they are called Master Michaels. Sometimes we refer to the sovereign of your universe of Nebadon as Christ Michael. Always and forever do they reign after the "Order of Michael," that being the designation of the first Son of their order and nature. This section describes how God has many Creator Sons that create their universe. In this book, you will learn Jesus is one of these sons. When Jesus mentioned in John 18:36 "My kingdom is not of this world." His kingdom is our local universe.

The statement above let there be light appears to be the beginning of time and space as we know it, before this period, there was no time and no space, there were only the spiritual worlds, and those worlds appear to have existed for all eternity. There is a relatively recent discovery that physicists call the zero-point-energy field. This field seems to be the light mentioned in Genesis 1:3 and is the lowest energy field known to man. The substance of this field is said to be far below that of an atom. Physicists are saying this field is everywhere present and is intelligent stuff; it records everything that happens in the universe. This new field the scientists have discovered reminds me of the Hindu's Akashic Records. They also claim this energy records everything in the universe, and they have known this for thousands of years. How often during your life have you heard or read about someone almost drowning, and they mentioned seeing their whole life flash before their eyes? Well, that is a recording of the zero-point energy field. I sincerely believe this field is the "World's Soul."

This same energy is mentioned several times in Revelation of the Bible, as the Book of Life. "And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened, which is the book of life; and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works." (Revelation 20:12). This is how you reap what you sow. Readers and scientists have proven this field exists, and they are calling this energy the zero-point-energy field.

Ervin Laszlo, a Physicist, has proven that there is an Akashic Record as the Hindus have taught for many years, and other physicists have confirmed that he is right. However, the physicists are now calling it the zero-point-energy-field or vacuum-field. In his book, Science and the Reenchantment of the Cosmos, Laszlo recited a story told by a young East Indian boy of a past life that was very convincing.

Stories like these, he says, are not the products of someone's imagination; they are truthful in the sense that those who recall them "remember" them. But these memories may not be what most people believe they are. The experiences only tell us that many children, and some adults in altered states of consciousness, can access the consciousness of other people. These people could be near or far away, living, or dead. In other words, having these experiences does not mean that those who have them are the flesh and blood reincarnation of those experiences they recollect.

Laszlo wrote that the more modest and astounding explanation of past-life experiences is that they constitute access to the holographic vacuum-traces of another person's consciousness. If we are not able to distinguish an "alien" hologram from our own, then we relive another person's consciousness as our own. The person whom we are reliving may live in another state or country or could have lived during some other period. He says the holograms that carry their life experiences are carried throughout space and don't fade out. Laszlo states: "Those who undergo past-life experience cannot, and ordinarily do not, distinguish other people's holograms from their own. For them, long-term personal memory merges imperceptibly into transpersonal memory."

Many years ago, I read the works of Carl Jung, the psychologist, and his theory called Collective Unconscious, along with the Hindu's Akashic Record. Carl Jung believed everyone has access to the same unconscious information, especially in dreams and altered states of mind. Carl Jung's Collective Unconscious appears to be the same energy as those mentioned in the Hindu's Akashic Records and the physicists' zero-point-energy-field. I realized after reading his work that people must be tapping into those records and thinking that they are experiencing a past life. So, I was elated to read Ervin Laszlo's book, Science and the Akashic Field, that he had soundproof of my belief. I recall long ago as a child looking into a toy hologram I had received as a Christmas present from a precinct in Brooklyn, New York. I remember thinking how strange and fascinating it was that the images were repeating themselves. Now, to learn over 60 years later that the same principle appears to be the necessary foundation of all cosmoses is overwhelming. According to the quantum physicists of our time, all energy comes from the zero-point-energy field. Somehow it seems that everything on the physical plane causes an interference pattern on this energy field, and as a result, some can see those three-dimensional pictures. People who can tap into these unusual scenes are usually in an altered state of consciousness.

The Distortion of The Bible

Throughout the year humanity has been duped. The misconception that Adam and Eve were the first two people on earth has brought prolonged confusion to humanity, and if you read the book of Genesis 4:9-17, of the Bible, you'll learn Adam and Eve couldn't have been the first

two people on earth. In that section, it states: "And Cain talked with Abel, his brother: and it came to pass, when they were in the field, that Cain rose up against Abel, his brother, and slew him. And the Lord said unto Cain, where is Abel thy brother? And he said I know not: Am I my brother's keeper? And he said, what hast thou have done? The voice of thy brother's blood crieth unto me from the ground. And now art thou cursed from the earth, which hath opened her mouth to receive thy brother's blood from thy hand. When thou tillest the ground, it shall not henceforth yield unto thee her strength; a fugitive and a vagabond shalt thou be in the earth. And Cain said unto the Lord, my punishment is greater than I can bear. Behold, thou hast driven me out this day from the face of the earth; and from thy face shall I be hidden; and I shall be a fugitive and a vagabond in the earth, and it shall come to pass, that every one that findeth me shall slay me. And the Lord said unto him. Therefore, whosoever slayeth Cain vengeance shall be taken on him sevenfold. And the Lord set a mark upon Cain, lest any finding him should kill him. And Cain went out from the presence of the Lord, and dwelt in the land of Nod, on the east of Eden. And Cain knew his wife, and she conceived, and bare Enoch: and he built a city, and called the name of the city, after the name of his son, Enoch." Wouldn't Cain's wife's parents have to be older than Cain the first human born on earth?

First, why was Cain afraid to leave the Garden of Eden, that someone might harm him if there were only his parents left on the planet after killing his brother? This tells us there were other people on earth. Why would Cain go to the Land of Nod if there was no one there? In this section, it mentions the Lord placed a mark on Cain and warned whoever slays Cain vengeance will be taken upon them sevenfold. Who was the Lord talking to? During ancient times, marks were placed on each tribe member's forehead as a warning if anyone harmed him/her vengeance would be their reward. After Cain had reached the Land of Nod, he met a woman, married her and they had a son they called Enoch. Where did the people of the Land of Nod come from? Friends, I sincerely believe the one that placed the mark on Cain was Adam and ordered him to leave the Garden of Eden after killing his brother, and there were many other people in the garden as well. It was the second garden, as you remember they were expelled from the first garden. All evidence indicates the people of the Land of Nod were here long before the arrival of Adam and Eve. The Urantia Book mentioned they were here thousands of years before.

The above statement would bring new problems if Adam and Eve were not the first two people on earth; then, who was the first? According to The Urantia Book, the first two humans evolved out of seeds planted in the sea after millions of years of mutating the DNA of that seed brought forth humans. The information about becoming humans was planted in the DNA of those seeds millions of years before humans arrived. Adam and Eve came to our planet as biological uplifters 37,000 years ago, after humanity had reached its biological peak and millions of years of evolution through the seeds of life.

Adam and Eve were commanded to be fruitful and multiply; they were to have up to One million offspring children, grandchildren, great-grandchildren, etc. Then those children were to go out and inbreed with the different races of the planet. Adam and Eve defaulted long before they reached that many children, but they continued with their original plans to uplift humanity with their more powerful genes even though they were doomed to die, just as the humans they came to help. After Adam and Eve defaulted, the Tree of Life was taken from them which would enable them to live indefinitely. Many of Adam and Eve's descendants were determined to fulfill their parents' original divine plans. Later we will explore the story of the default. If you examine the analysis of geneticists, and reports on the DNA of people who had their genes analyzed with

companies like 23 and Me.com and Ancestry.com, usually after all the classifications at the end of the reports, you will find a report on the unassigned percentage of genes. These genes can be found all over the world, not just in one race. Some geneticists claim those genes appeared about 40 thousand years ago in the Middle East, and they have no idea from where they came.

Here is something to help us understand what happened when those biological engineers came to Earth. Richard Klein (paleoanthropologist) April 12, 2004 [https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Richard_Klein_\(paleoanthropologist\)](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Richard_Klein_(paleoanthropologist)) “A paleoanthropologist at Stanford University suggested that a genetic mutation occurred 40,000 years ago and caused an abrupt revolution in the way people thought and behaved.”

The Dawn of Life

Before going any further, I am aware some believe life started suddenly or more precisely by chance. Can anyone out there tell me how nothing can decide to come into being and create vast universes? One microbiologist claimed according to chance it would be easier for a tornado to go through a junkyard and create a massive 747 jumbo jet than for life to have started by chance. And I would agree with him.

Before continuing let me explain to my readers a book I will quote often, The Urantia Book, I discovered the book in 1997 while reading a New York City newspaper. It was the 4th of July weekend they were celebrating the Roswell New Mexico UFO crash of 1947. The Urantia Foundation was one of the organizations that had a concession there selling The Urantia Book. This reporter exaggerated and said this book claimed Jesus was the leader of extraterrestrials: well, you know that caught my attention. Some of the things the reporter was saying prompted me to purchase the book and see for myself. I checked the information out at East West Book Store in Manhattan, and they had the book in stock. That was Friday, July 4, 1997. I couldn't go that same day to get the book, as I had to take my friend out to dinner. The next day I rushed to East West Book Store in Manhattan, I was living in Brooklyn, New York at the time. I did not expect to find a book with over 2,000 pages, and I was in awe. I didn't see anything about Jesus being the leader of extraterrestrials, but as I searched the table of contents, I did recognize names that were familiar to me; an example: Micheál, the Melchizedek, Adam, and Eve, etc.

Since I've been searching for a reason for humanity being on this planet all my adult life and at that time, I was 60 years old, this book commanded just about all my attention. The Urantia Foundation claims the book is humanity's fifth Revelation: (1) was the coming of the sons of God of Genesis 6:4, (2) Adam and Eve, (3) the Melchizedek, (4), Jesus Christ. The book is enormous, and I can see how it would intimidate most people. I was determined to analyze the book's contents, so I bought the book that Saturday, and it was only \$20. My lady friend and I were to spend a week vacation in Virginia Beach that coming week. During my three weeks of vacation, I spent much of my time reading The Urantia Book, and I was amazed at the information it contained. I could not understand why more people did not know about this book until I read the entire book.

After searching all my adult life for God, at age 60, in 1997 I discovered The Urantia Book and found what I was looking for the book has 2,097 pages was compiled in the late 1920s and early 1930s has no human author, was published in 1955, and was blacklisted by the Illuminati—Cabal ever since. That is why most people never heard of the book. They made sure most of the colleges denied its value, which they control many of them. They would claim since the book has no human author spooks wrote the book. The book points to The Elite, Cabal, and Illuminati as

descendants of the celestial sons of God in Genesis 6:4 who had children with humans and became men of renown. Those sons of God in Genesis committed the first sins on earth. The book exposed them. The ones that blacklisted the book were well-known people and in 1955 almost everyone listens to them, even today most listen to them after finding out most of them were adrenochrome drinkers and pedophilia.

How this book came into being is complicated. When I started reading the book, I tried to find out who wrote the book but did not get very far. Subsequently, I gave up after reading the entire book's 2,097 pages. After reading the book, with my many years of searching for the truth, I realized no human could have written such an advanced spiritual book without help from a higher source. The religious information in the book was too consistent and superior for humans to have created. And I realized it would be a waste of time trying to find the book's author. The Urantia Book has no known human author.

From the information I have gleaned over the years, especially from The Urantia Book, our earth started to cool down about one billion years ago. The Urantia Book mentions around 600 million years ago a commissioner of beings from the higher world called Life Carriers sent to earth a group of Life Carriers to study the physical condition of our planet before starting life on our planet. Moreover, the higher worlds say Life Carriers are the ones that bring life to a planet or start life on a planet. Just as the modern-day scientists on earth the Life Carriers can manipulate life, but they cannot give life, they created the seed. Only the Universe Spirit Mother of God can provide the initial life and the gift of mind, she is the "Mother" of our universe she's the spirit of God that gives the breath of life. Psalms 104:30, mentions her: "Thou sendest forth thou Spirit, and they are created: and thou renewest the face of the earth."

After extensive study of our planet, the Life Carriers decided upon a sodium chloride pattern form of life, but they couldn't plant the seeds until the oceans' water became sufficiently briny. The earth's type of protoplasm can function only in a suitable salt solution.

All ancestral life vegetation and animals evolved in a salt solution habitat. The land animals could not continue without this essential salt solution circulating throughout their bloodstream, every cell submerged in this briny depth.

Life does not originate spontaneously. Life is constructed according to plans formulated by the "unrevealed" Architects of Beings and appears on the inhabited planets either by direct importation or because of the operation of Life Carriers of a local universe. These Carriers of life are among the most interesting and versatile of the diverse family of universe Sons. They are entrusted with the designing and carrying creature life to planetary spheres, and after planting this life on such new worlds, they remain there for long periods to foster its development. Consequently, when the ocean depth reached the point where it had enough briny solution, those Life Carriers commenced performing their duty.

Five hundred fifty million years ago the Life Carrier corps returned to Urantia: In cooperation with spiritual powers and superphysical forces we organized and initiated the original life patterns of this world and planted them in the hospitable waters of the realm. All planetary life (aside from extra-planetary personalities) down to the days of Caligastia, the Planetary Prince, had its origin in our three original, identical, and simultaneous marine-life implantations. These three life implantations have been designated as: the central or Eurasian-African, the eastern or Australasian, and the western, embracing Greenland and the Americas. ² Caligastia is the one Jesus referred to as the prince of this world (John 16:11).

The Urantia Book mentions that Life Carriers were given 500 thousand years to create the seed of life they didn't bring the seed to our planet; they formed the seed from raw material (the chemical of the earth), the dust of the ground. Four Hundred fifty million years ago, when

the phenomenon of transition from vegetable life to animal life commenced, this change took place in the shallow waters, the protected tropical lagoons, and the shores of separate continents. There were many different stages between the early primitive vegetable form of life and the later animal organisms. Today we can see vestiges of old molds persist and can hardly be called either plants or animals. There has been a gradual series of vegetables and animals found which successively led from the simplest to the most complex organisms. However, you will not be able to see that connecting link in the animal kingdom or between the highest pre-human and the dawn of humans.

Moreover, the missing links anthropologists, such as Louis and Mary Leakey searched for in the 1940s and 1950s between the ape family and the humans, were never found. In 1974, an old skull was discovered in Ethiopia which anthropologists later called Lucy. Convinced they had found the missing link, but soon realized they were mistaken. The Urantia Book says they will never find a missing link, for the simple reason there never was one. Today they are still looking for a missing link, and they are still stumbling in the dark.

From time to time, there were new species of animal life appeared. They did not evolve due to the gradual accumulation of small variations; they came as an entirely new order of life and appeared suddenly. The sudden appearance of new species of living organisms was strictly biologic; there is nothing supernatural about these genetic mutations. It was nature doing her job Life Carries implanted the instructions in the DNA of those seeds millions of years before they appeared. Consider how the scientists of today are experimenting with microbiology.

The higher protozoan types of life appeared, and they appeared suddenly. Millions of year-old ameba's offspring are with us today, and little has changed throughout the years. These creatures, the amoebas, amused themselves just about as they did when it was the last and most significant achievement in life evolution. The amebae are to the animal creation what bacteria are to the plant kingdom. It wasn't long before this single-celled animal conglomerated into communities. First, there was the Volvox, then many years later the hydra and jellyfish. Much later the starfish appeared.

From these minute creatures, the stage was set for the first backbone animal, the fish. From this fish family, sprang two unique modifications the frogs and the salamander. It was the frog that started the progressive differentiation in animal life that finally brought forth man. Higher Beings consider the frog as one of man's earliest surviving ancestors that mutated, but it also failed to progress, remaining the same as it did millions of years ago. The Urantia Book also says there is no surviving ancestry between the frog and man. From the frog came the reptiles, a great animal family that is all but extinct. But before they started disappearing, they brought forth the entire bird family and many other mammals. Can you imagine those huge dinosaurs as descendants of a little frog? Those Higher Beings say the most significant leap of all the pre-human evolution was when reptiles became birds. The birds of today (eagles, ducks, pigeons, etc.) are all descendants of those reptiles millions of years ago. The Higher Beings claims it was a little reptilian dinosaur, a flesh-eating predator, that developed rapidly into a variety of land creatures, and marine types such as seals, whales, and air navigators like the bird families. Life Carries wrote about pre-human types of mammals from which our ancestors were descendants.

The Dawn of Man

About a million years ago, the direct ancestors of humanity made their appearance by three successive and sudden mutations coming from the early stock of lemur types of placental mammals. The most critical factors of these old lemurs were from the western or later American group

of evolving life plasma. But before establishing a direct line of human ancestry, this strain was reinforced by contributions from the central life implantation that developed in Africa. Eastern life contributed nothing to the actual production of the human species.

The early lemur type that was part of the ancestry of humans was not related to the pre-existent apes and Gibbon living in Eurasia and North Africa whose offspring has survived to the present. Nor were they offspring of present-day lemur. They were offspring of lemur common to both, but long extinct. The early lemur evolved in the Western Hemisphere. The establishment of the direct mammalian ancestry of men took place in Southwestern Asia in the area where the first life implantation took place but on the border of the eastern regions. The writer of this section of The Urantia Book says that several million years ago the Northern American types of lemurs migrated westward over the Bering Land Bridge and slowly made their way southwest along the Asiatic coast. These migrating tribes finally reached the vast region between the Mediterranean Sea and the elevating mountainous region of the Indian Peninsula. In this location west of India, they were joined by other favorable strains, and this was the start of human ancestry.

Those Higher Beings of The Urantia Book continue to write about the lemur of thousands of years ago. They mentioned about one million years ago the Mesopotamian dawn mammals, direct descendants of the North American lemur type of placental, suddenly appeared. They were frisky little creatures; they grew to about three feet tall. They did not habitually walk on their hind legs, but they easily stood erect. They were hairy and quick, and they chattered like monkeys, but unlike the simian tribes, they ate meat. They had primitive opposable thumbs, also highly useful for grasping big toes. The later apes kept the big grasping toes but never evolved the human-type thumbs. Those dawn mammals were full-grown at four years old. Most of the time, they were born singly, although twins were occasionally born. This new class of species had the most massive brains for the size of any animal living on Earth. They had many of the instincts and emotions that primitive man had. Food, hunger, and yearning for sex were well-developed.

Early in the life of these dawn mammals in the treetop home of a superior pair of agile creatures' twins were born, a male and a female. Comparing them to their ancestors, they were beautiful little creatures. They had little hair on their bodies, which wasn't a problem as they lived in a warm climate. They grew a little over four feet. They were more substantial in every way than their parents, having longer legs and shorter arms, and they had almost perfectly opposable thumbs. They walked upright and had feet virtually as suitable modern-day humans.

Their brains were inferior and smaller than humans, but their brains were superior and larger than their ancestors. At a young age, the twins displayed superior intelligence and were soon recognized as the leaders of the whole-of-dawn-mammals. When the number of this group increased, war broke out, and when the offensive struggle was over, not one of the pre-existent ancestral races of dawn mammals was alive. For 15 thousand years (600 generations) the new species became the terror of that part of the world. All the ferocious animals of an earlier time had perished. The large animals native to that area were not carnivorous. And the large cat families had not entered that area of the earth yet. Present-day man and the simian sprung from the same tribe and species, but not from the same parents. Man's ancestors mutated from the superior strains of a selected portion of this mid-mammal tribes. Many of the modern-day simians are descendants of the most inferior couples of this mid-mammal group, who survived by hiding themselves in a deep cave where they stored food for two weeks during the last fierce battle of their tribe, coming out after the fight was over.

In comparison, our ancestral species were an improvement in every way. Even the lifespan was longer (about 25 years), and some essential human traits appeared in the new species. Those mid-mammals were the first that showed an inclination toward construction, as shown in their rivalry in building treetop sleeping quarters and their subterranean retreats. They were the first ever to provide for their safety in both arboreal and underground shelters. They forsook the trees as their homes, living on the ground during the day and sleeping in the trees at night.

The direct lemur-like mother of the dawn mammals species escaped death no less than five times before she gave birth to children of a new and more advanced order of mammals. But the closest call of all was when lightning struck the tree where the future mother and father of the primate twins were sleeping. Both parents were shocked their bodies were badly burned, and three of their seven children perished by this bolt of lightning from the skies. These evolving mammals were on the borderline of being superstitious. The couple whose treehouse burned were leaders of a more advanced group of mammals. Following their example, more than half of this group relocated their treetop homes. They moved about two miles away and built themselves new sleeping quarters and underground shelters where they retreated to when danger was near. It wasn't long after finishing their homes that this couple with so many tribulations found themselves, excited parents of male and female, twins the most exciting and essential mammals ever to be born in the world up to that time. They were the first of the new species of backward primates that were the next vital step in pre-human evolution.

Consequently, with the birth of primate twins another couple of mid-mammal tribes, who were mentally and physically inferior also gave birth to twins. These twins' male and female weren't interested in conquest and were concerned only with finding food. They didn't eat meat, so they lost interest in prey. These mentally inferior twins became the founders of the modern-day Simian tribes. Their descendants preferred the warmer climate, where tropical fruits were abundant, and they continue today as they were at that time. According to The Urantia Book, man and apes are related as they originated from the same mid-mammals. The inferior group was bound to produce the modern-day monkey, baboon, chimpanzee, and gorilla; the superior pair was to continue the line of ascent that evolved into modern-day man.

In 1972, two paleontologists Stephen Jay Gould and Niles Eldredge came up with the hypothesis, Punctuated Equilibrium; one thing scientists have observed has to do with new species appearing in the fossil records. Looking through the documents you will find there is an extended period when there doesn't seem to be any new life form on earth, then suddenly there is a big boom! There are all these new species coming at once. See paper 62 of The Urantia Book.

The Primates

Referring to the birth of the superior twins, the leading members of the mid-mammal tribes, these babies were unusual. They had less hair on their bodies than their parents, and when they were very young, they insisted on walking upright. Their ancestors learned to walk upright on their hind legs, but these children stood upright from the beginning. They grew to a height of five feet, and their heads were longer than any other in their tribes. They learned to communicate by signs and sounds although they were never able to teach their tribe these new symbols. Around age 14, the twins fled from their tribe going west to start a new species of primates. These new creatures were rightly called primates since they were the direct animal ancestors of the human family. These primates were more human and less animal. To view the skeleton of the

new species, they were like the primitive human race. Their hands and feet fully developed as humans, and they could walk and run as well as humans.

The increased use of their hands helped them develop brain power, although they did not have the mental capacity that could be called human. They reached maturity at about ten years old and had a natural lifespan of about 40 years old. After almost 900, generations of development covering about 21 thousand years from the original dawn mammals, parents of primates suddenly gave birth to two awesome creatures the first two human beings. It is hard to believe the thousands of years of pains and sorrows our ancient ancestors had to face for us to reach this stage of our evolution. And very few of us give it a thought; we don't seem to understand how important it is, as we are still not evolved enough.

I sincerely believe we present-day humans need to sit down and meditate and give thanks to our ancient ancestors who had these experiences so that we can reach a state where we can understand and be aware of the existence of a Superior Being. Then we are to help those who yet do not have the foresight to recognize these truths, which need a little more time to grasp these truths. We need to realize not everyone is in the same grade in the schoolhouse of the earth. I sincerely believe many of our ancient ancestors have made it to the higher worlds we call heaven and can see what's happening on our planet through what scientists call today the zero-point-energy field. This field appears to be the same concept as the Hindus call The Akashic records, which record everything that ever happened, as mentioned earlier.

I am acutely aware these concepts are new to some people, and the reason for that all our lives we have been conditioned to believe certain things. Our brains are like computers and must be programmed for the right information. We humans have free will and if we are open to new ideas, eventually our soul will recognize the truth if we are sincere.

The First Human Beings

From the year A.D. 1934 back to the birth of the first two human beings is just 993,419 years. Those two remarkable creatures were true human beings. They possessed perfect human thumbs, as had many of their ancestors, while they had just as perfect feet as the present-day human race. They were walkers and runners, not climbers: the grasping function of the big toe was absent, completely absent. When danger drove them to the treetops, they climbed just like humans of today would. They would climb up the trunk of a tree like a bear and not as would a chimpanzee or a gorilla, swinging by the branches.

These first human beings and their descendants reached full maturity at twelve years of age and possessed a potential lifespan of about seventy-five years.

Many new emotions early appeared in these human twins. They experienced admiration for both objects and other beings and exhibited considerable vanity. But the most remarkable advance in emotional development was the sudden appearance of a new group of really human feelings, the worshipful group, embracing awe, reverence, humility, and even a primitive form of gratitude. Fear, joined with ignorance of natural phenomena, is about to give birth to primitive religion.

Not only were such human feelings manifested in these primitive humans, but also many more highly evolved sentiments were also present in rudimentary form. They were mildly cognizant of pity, shame, and reproach and were acutely conscious of love, hate, and revenge, being also susceptible to marked feelings of jealousy.

These first two humans—the twins—were a great trial to their primate parents. They were so curious and adventurous that they nearly lost their lives on numerous occasions before they were eight years old. As it was, they were rather well scarred up by the time they were twelve.

Very early they learned to engage in verbal communication; by the age of ten they had worked out an improved sign and word language of almost half a hundred ideas and had greatly improved and expanded the crude communicative technique of their ancestors. But try as hard as they might, they were only able to teach a few of their new signs and symbols to their parents.

When about nine years of age, they journeyed off down the river one bright day and held a momentous conference. Every celestial intelligent stationed on Urantia, (earth), including myself, was present as an observer of the transactions of this noontide tryst. On this eventful day they arrived at an understanding to live with and for each other, and this was the first of a series of such agreements which finally culminated in the decision to flee from their inferior animal associates and to journey northward, little knowing that they were thus to found the human race.

While we were all greatly concerned with what these two little savages were planning, we were powerless to control the working of their minds; we did not—could not—arbitrarily influence their decisions. But within the permissible limits of planetary function, we, Life Carriers, together with our associates, all conspired to lead the human twins northward and far from their hairy and partially tree-dwelling people. And so, by reason of their intelligent choice, the twins did migrate, and because of our supervision, they migrated northward to a secluded region where they escaped the possibility of biologic degradation through admixture with their inferior relatives of the primate's tribes.

Shortly before their departure from the home forests they lost their mother in a gibbon raid. While she did not possess their intelligence, she did have a worthy mammalian affection of a high order for her offspring, and she fearlessly gave her life in the attempt to save the wonderful pair. Nor was her sacrifice in vain, for she held off the enemy until the father arrived with reinforcements and put the invaders to rout.

Soon after this young couple forsook their associates to found the human race, their primate father became disconsolate—he was heartbroken. He refused to eat, even when food was brought to him by his other children. His brilliant offspring having been lost, life did not seem worth living among his ordinary follows; so, he wandered off into the forest, was set upon by hostile Gibbons and beaten to death.³

As I mentioned before therefore present-day humans need to sit down and contemplate the sacrifices our ancient ancestors experienced so that today we can recognize and experience a Superior Being. Then to help those who do not have the foresight and need a little more time to understand these things. We all need to be aware that Earth is a schoolhouse, and we are not all in the same grade.

Evolution of the Human Mind

We, the Life Carriers on Urantia, had passed through the long vigil of watchful waiting since the day we first planted the life plasma in the planetary waters, and naturally the appearance of the first intelligent and volitional beings brought to us great joy and supreme satisfaction.

We had been watching the twins developmentally through our observation of the functioning of the seven-adjutant mind-spirits assigned to Urantia at the time of our arrival on the planet. Throughout the long evolutionary development of planetary life, these tireless mind ministers had ever registered their increasing ability to contact with the successively expanding brain capacities of the progressively superior animal creatures.

At first only the spirit of intuition could function in the instinctive and reflex behavior of the primordial animal life. With the differentiation of higher types, the spirit of understanding was able to endow such creatures with the gift of spontaneous association of ideas. Later on we observed the spirit of courage in operation; evolving animals really developed a crude form of protective self-consciousness. After the appearance of the mammalian groups, we beheld the spirit of knowledge manifesting itself in increased measure. And the evolution of the higher mammals brought the function of the spirit of counsel, with the resulting growth of the herd instinct and the beginnings of primitive social development.

Increasingly, on down through the dawn mammals, the mid-mammals, and the Primates, we had observed the augmented service of the first five adjutants. But never had the remaining two, the highest mind ministers, been able to function in the Urantia type of evolutionary mind.

Imagine our joy one day—the twins were about ten years old—when the spirit of worship made its first contact with the mind of the female twin and shortly thereafter with the male. We knew that something closely akin to human mind was approaching culmination; and when, about a year later, they finally resolved, because of meditative thought and purposeful decision, to flee from home and journey north, then did the spirit of wisdom begin to function on Urantia and in these two now recognized human minds.

*There was an immediate and new order of mobilization of the seven-adjutant mind-spirits. We were alive with expectation; we realized that the long-awaited-for hour was approaching; we knew we were upon the threshold of the realization of our protracted effort to evolve will creatures on Urantia (earth). And so, according to the Life Carriers, this was the beginning of the human race as recorded in *The Urantia Book*, and they witnessed it all.* ⁴

The adjutant mind spirits activate and regulate the adaptive or non-mechanical teachable types of minds—in other words, the human types of minds—the types of minds that are capable of learning from experience. Just as the spirit adjutants manipulate mind potential, so the Life Carriers exercise considerable discretionary control over the environmental aspects of the evolutionary processes up to the time of the appearance of human will, the ability to do God's will, and to potentially worship Him.

Here is where my spiritual joy overwhelmed me—to read about the Higher Beings discussing their feelings, emotions, and desires. I was amazed and not prepared for this. We, in the Western World, were taught all our lives, that angels and the higher creatures of God were perfect beings. They had no emotions or feelings. They were conditioned to do God's will automatically. Here we have these Higher Beings talking about their supreme satisfaction, and how they and other creatures of God worked industriously as they guided those precious seeds of life through millions of years of evolution. We humans need to realize we are evolving beings, and we are still developing. The way we can help in this process is to try to do our part in fulfilling God's will, which is the primary process in our evolving. The quickest way to evolve is to do God's will.

Continuing over the next few days, the Higher Beings who were stationed on earth were given praise for the great work they had accomplished in developing volitional creatures on our planet earth. These beings work in another dimension of a higher vibration. We do not have the equipment to detect them.

To give this information as a foundation, I quote this entire section from page 709-710 of The Urantia Book. In this section, several names are mentioned which may not be familiar: Salvington, Edentia, Satania, and Jerusem.

1. Salvington, headquarters of our local Universe, Nebadon, which is governed by our Creator Son Christ Michael (who we know as Jesus Christ) with his Mother Spirit consort.
2. Edentia is headquarters of the constellation to which our system belongs.
3. Satania is the administrative system of approximately one thousand habitable worlds to which our planet belongs.
4. Jerusem is headquarters of Satania, the worlds of our local network.

Recognition as an Inhabited World

We did not have to wait long. At noon, the day after the runaway of the twins, there occurred the initial test flash of the universe circuit signals at the planetary reception-focus of Urantia. We were all astir with the realization that a great event was impending; but since this world was a life experiment station, we had not the slightest idea of just how we would be apprised of the recognition of intelligent life on the planet. But we were not long in suspense. On the third day after elopement of the twins, and before the Life Carrier corps departed, there arrived the Nebadon Archangel of initial planetary circuit establishment. It was an eventful day on Urantia when our small group gathered about the planetary pole of space communication and received the first message from Salvington, over the newly established mind circuit of the planet. And this first message, dictated by the chief of the archangel corps, said:

“To the Life Carriers of Urantia—Greetings! We transmit assurance of great pleasure on Salvington, Edentia, and Jerusem in honor of the registration on the headquarters of Nebadon of the signal of the existence on Urantia of mind of will dignity. The purposeful decision of the twins to flee northward and segregate their offspring from their inferior ancestors has been noted. This is the first decision of mind—the human type of mind on Urantia and automatically established the circuit of communication over which this initial message of acknowledgment is transmitting.”

Next over this new circuit came the greetings of the Most Highs of Edentia, containing instructions for the resident Life Carriers forbidding us to interfere with the pattern of life we had established. We were directed not to intervene in the affairs of human progress. It should not be inferred that Life Carriers ever arbitrarily and mechanically interfere with the natural overworking of the planetary evolutionary plans, for we do not. But up to this time we had been permitted to manipulate the environment and shield the life plasma in a special manner, and it was this extraordinary, but wholly natural, supervision that was to be discontinued.

And no sooner had the Most High left off speaking than the beautiful message of Lucifer, then sovereign of the Satania system, began to planetize. Now the Life Carriers heard the welcome words of their own chief and received his permission to return to Jerusem. This message from Lucifer contained the official acceptance of the Life Carriers’ work on Urantia and absolved us from all future criticism of any of our efforts to improve the life patterns of Nebadon as established in the Satania system.

These messages from Salvington, Edentia, and Jerusem formally marked the termination of the Life Carriers’ age-long supervision of the planet. For age we have been on duty, assisted only by the seven adjutant mind-spirits and the master physical Controllers. And now, with the power of choosing to worship and to ascend, having appeared in the evolutionary creatures of the planet, we realized that our work was finished,

and our group prepared to depart. Urantia being a life-modification world, permission was granted to leave behind two senior Life Carriers with twelve assistants, and I was chosen as one of this group and have ever since been on Urantia.

It is just 993,408 years ago (from the year C.E. 1934) that Urantia was formally recognized as a planet of human habitation in the universe of Nebadon. Biologic evolution had once again achieved the human levels of will dignity; man had arrived on planet 606 (earth) of Satania.⁵

When I read this section of The Urantia Book, I was able to glean information about the higher worlds or heaven. There is a hierarchical order in place throughout the universe. Life Carriers were allowed to help our ancient ancestors until they reached the point in their evolution where they were able to make their own decisions and not rely on instinct entirely, after that they were limited to the amount of help, they could give. The heaven we learned about as children is really of higher worlds.

There were some devices put in place on our planet that Higher Beings call “Urantia,” so they could communicate with the Life Carriers, and that device was in another dimension. This device could send messages faster than the speed of light. According to “The Urantia Book.” Salvington, Edentia, and Jerusem, where the message originated were millions upon millions of light years away. Today our scientists know there are conditions on earth where something can travel faster than the speed of light.

This instrument for communication stayed in place until Lucifer’s rebellion, after that all communication from higher worlds was canceled. Reading this section of “The Urantia Book, I had to study its words carefully. This is where Lucifer took on a real identity for me, he was becoming real. Now I understand why Lucifer was such an important being. He oversaw 1 thousand planets on our planet including Lucifer had all information about his rebellion erased all but the little information John brought out in Revelation. This is why we have so little information about his rebellion. In Revelation 12:9-12 we were warned that Lucifer and his followers were cast out of the heaven worlds, and they rejoiced, and he and his rebellious ones were cast down to earth, John said in Revelation 12:12, “Therefore rejoice, ye heaven, and ye that dwell in them. Woe to the inhabitors of the earth and sea! For the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, because he knoweth he has but a short time.” This happened so long ago that most people accept it only as a myth, and you can see what is happening in our world. Lucifer's rebellion occurred thousands of years after the sons of God of Genesis 6:4 who had children by the daughters of men came to our planet to help civilize humanity. We will discuss it in a later chapter.

Our planet Earth was registered as an inhabited world when the first two human beings, the twins, were eleven years old and when they became the parents of the second generation of real people on Earth. The Archangel message from Salvington on this occasion of formal recognition closed with these words: *Man-mind has appeared on 606 (earth) of Satania, and those parents of the new race shall be called Andon and Fonta. And all Archangels pray that these creatures may speedily be endowed with the personal indwelling of the gift of the spirit of the Universal Father.⁶*

That gift mentioned by the Universal Father you’ll find in 1 Corinthians 3:16: “Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you?” The geneticists can’t understand, how man and ape are so far apart intellectually when their genes are only a small percentage different; well, it's because this Spirit of God dwells in man.

Andon is the Nebadon (the higher worlds call our local universe) name, which signifies the first father-like creature who expressed human perfection hunger. Fonta signifies the first son-like creature to express human perfection hunger. Andon and Fonta never knew these names until they were bestowed upon them at the time of fusion with the Spirit of God. This fusion with the Spirit of God will be explained in a later chapter. Throughout their mortal sojourn on earth, they called each other Sonta-an and Son-en. Sonta-an means loved by Mother; Son-en signifies loved by Father. They give each other these names and their meaning show their regard and affection for each other.

This is where humanity reached the stage in their evolution that they could receive fragmentation of the Spirit of the Universal Father, which we sometimes refer to as the God within. Throughout "The Urantia Book," the God within is alluded to as the Thought Adjuster. Before this period of our prehistoric ancestor's evolution, the God within did not dwell in the minds of the potential human race. The Spirit of God within was a special endowment for humanity when they reached the human stage.

I went through these pages excitedly realizing there was a great possibility that those creatures, Andon and Fonta, would be our first human parents. As I continued to read The Urantia Book, I was slowly reaching the conclusion this information was given to us by a higher authority. After reading the entire 2,097 pages and searching my entire adult life (will be 80 on my next birthday), I know no human could have written a book of that nature. The book is too spiritually advanced and consistent for humans to have created without help from a higher source. I realize man has been to the moon and back, but this is a different kind of knowledge you can't solve with mathematics. It appears to be a mystery how they compiled the information in the book.

So, to continue with our main story, after running away from their tribe, the twins continued to travel in a northward direction, experiencing great fear in the first few days. They especially feared to displease their father and immediate family; they imagined being attacked by hostile relatives and of meeting death at the hands of jealous tribesmen. While living with their tribe, they stayed mostly to themselves. They even built for themselves a separate treetop home that was superior to any of their tribe members. And it caused envy within their tribe. They weren't popular with their animal cousin. One day while alone in their treetop home, they decided to leave. They had already built a crude treetop retreat about a half-day journey to the north they visited at times to be alone; this was their secret hiding place. The twins feared to be on the ground at night, leaving their tribal group a little before nightfall, they correctly surmised they would less likely be missed and pursued by their tribe and relatives. The twins were very courageous to plan their escape at night. They safely reached their secret hideout around midnight of the day they left home.

After several days on their northern trek, they discovered a flint deposit and stones of various sizes suitable for different use. In attempting to chip the flint so they could use it for specific purposes. Andon discovered their sparkling quality. The thought flashed through his mind of starting a fire with the spark the flint produces when struck. Building a fire was not one of their primary concerns, and at the time the weather was still mild. But the autumn sun was getting lower in the sky as they continued their journey northward; the nights were getting cooler and cooler, they used animals' skin to keep themselves warm.

When the twins were away from their tribe about a month, Andon showed his mate he believed he could start a fire from the sparks the flint made when struck. They tried for two months to start a fire but failed. Each day they attempted to start a fire, until one day just before sunset,

it dawned on Fonta as she sighted an abandoned dried bird nest way up in a tree, that they could start a fire with the nest. She quickly climbed the tree to secure the dry, highly flammable nest, which flared up as soon as sparks fell upon them. It startled them. They almost lost the fire but saved it by adding more suitable fuel. That began the first search for firewood by the parents of all humanity.

It was one of the happiest moments of their short but eventful lives. All night they sat and watched the burning fire. They didn't realize they had made a discovery that would allow them to challenge the climate and be forever free of their animal relatives of the southern land. The primate relatives of Andon and Fonta often used fire started by lightning, but never had a creature on earth had a method to start their fire.

It was around two years after leaving their tribe before they had their first child. They named him Sontad, the first child on earth wrapped with covering at the time of birth. The next generation of humans began with this new evolution and with it, the instincts to properly care for the feeble infants that showed the progressive development of mind. Andon and Fonta had 19 children and lived to see about 50 grandchildren and also a half dozen great-grandchildren. The family lived in four adjoining rock shelters or semi-caves. Three were interconnected by hallways excavated in the soft limestone with flint tools devised by the twins' children. Those Higher Beings commenced describing the features of those humans. They mentioned they looked more like today's Eskimo than any other race of people. The tribal life of the early humans was the beginning of numerous social customs. They were the first creatures to make use of animal skin.

The increase in brain power gave these primitive beings immediate development in social organization and a new class of clan labor. They were extremely imitative, and their play instinct slightly developed. They had little sense of humor. They smiled on occasion, but they hardly engaged in hearty laughter. These primitive humans were not as sensitive as we are today. Childbirth was not as painful an ordeal to Fonta and her immediate progeny as it is for present-day mothers.

They were an astounding tribe. The male would fight to the last breath for their mate and offspring, and the mother was affectionately protective of their children. Primitive parents were very loyal to their families which they would die for. Altruism was not yet born in their primitive minds. But the nascent emotions for the birth of religion was already present in the early humans. During the later years of the tribe, there was a regularly recurring battle with the inferior tribe. It was a great sight to see one of those primitive men fights valiantly with one hand while he struggled to protect an injured comrade. Many of those advantageous traits of modern humans were beginning to sprout in those primitive humans.

The Urantia Book states the original Andonic clan kept an unbroken line of leadership until the 27th generation. There was no male offspring appearing among Santod's immediate descendants of the firstborn of Andon and Fonta. Therefore, rival males began to fight for the right to rule. Before the Andonic clan completely broke up, they had a well-developed language from their many years of inter-communication. Their language grew almost daily because of innovation and adapting to their environment. Their language became the tongue of the early families of the earth until the later appearance of the color races.

As time passed, the Andonic clan grew in number and friction, and misunderstanding grew between the families. It seems the only thing that occupied their minds was hunting for food and fighting to avenge injustice real or imaginary injustice from neighboring tribes. There were tremendous losses as family feuds increased and tribal warfare broke out. Some of the most valuable strains of ability and intelligence were lost

to the world forever as a result. In fact, the entire civilization was almost lost because of continuous warfare of the clans. The Higher Beings realized it was virtually impossible to get primitive men to live in peace. That is not difficult to understand, all we must do is take a look at the so-called civilized people of today. We humans are descendants of fighting animals, and when in close quarters we offend and irritate each other. The Life Carriers understood and took steps to make amends. There were an eventual separation and development of humans at least three, and more often six distinct and separate races.

According to the Higher Beings, the descendants of Andon and Fonta found their way into Europe from the Middle East, and these Andonic tribes were the first to settle thousands of people along the Somme River. The Somme River was the one river unchanged by glaciers. It is the same today as it was thousands of years ago. Those aboriginals of Urantia (earth) often dwelt in shelters of overhanging cliffs along the Somme River in hillside caves, where they enjoyed the comfort of their fires without being too inconvenienced by the smoke. They preferred to camp near the edge of the forest and beside the streams. They showed great skill in constructing stone sleeping quarters and dome-shaped stone huts that they crawled into at night. The entrance to their shelters closed at night by rolling a stone in front of it. The rock to close the portal was placed inside the hut before they completed the roof.

The Andonites were fearless and successful hunters. Their entire diet consisted of meat except for some wild berries and fruits. As Andon had invented the stone ax, his early descendants discovered and made great use of the throwing stick and harpoon. The first humans became very skillful in fashioning flint tools. They would travel many miles in search of flint. Flint had the same value for them as gold, platinum, and diamonds have for humans today. In many ways, the Andonic tribes displayed a degree of intelligence their ancestors had not reached in half million years.

The early Andonites showed clannish disposition; they hunted in groups and never wandered very far away from their caves. They seemed to realize they were a new type of creature, so they avoided becoming separated. Andon and Fonta worked hard to nurture their clan. They lived to the age of 42, both were killed during an earthquake by falling overhanging rocks. Five children and 11 grandchildren perished with them, and almost a score of their children suffered severe injuries. After the death of his parents, despite a severely injured foot, Sontad immediately took over leadership of the clan assisted by his wife. The family of Andon and Fonta stayed together until the twentieth generation. A combination of food competition and social friction brought about the beginning of dispersion.

I contemplated the unbelievable struggle our ancient ancestors had to endure, and the untold pains and sorrows. I wondered if the twins ever asked themselves somewhere along the way, what is it all for? What is it that drives a person on despite all circumstances? The unseen forces that drove our ancient ancestors were very great. Here, I suggest we pause and try to get an understanding of what happened to Andon and Fonta after they left our plane of being. I quote from the pages that are assumed by many to be the information from Higher Beings imparted to us. After reading this section, I will attempt to clarify those terms with which you may not be familiar.

The survival of Andon and Fonta

Andon and Fonta, the splendid founders of the human race, received recognition at the time of the adjudication of Urantia (earth) upon the arrival of the Planetary Prince, and in due time they emerged from the regime of the mansion worlds with citizenship status on Jerusem. Although they have not been permitted to return to Urantia, they are cognizant of the history of the race they founded. They grieved over the Caligastia betrayal,

sorrowed because of the Adamic failure, but rejoiced exceedingly when announcement was received that Michael (Jesus) had selected their world as the theater for his final bestowal.

On Jerusem, both Andon and Fonta were fused with their Thought Adjuster, as also several of their children, including Sontad, but the majority of even their immediate descendants only achieved Spirit fusion. Andon and Fonta, shortly after their arrival on Jerusem, received permission from the System Sovereign to return to the first mansion world to serve with the morontia personalities who welcome the pilgrims of time from Urantia (earth) to the heavenly spheres. And have been assigned indefinitely to this service. They sought to send greetings to Urantia in connection with these revelations, but this request was wisely denied them.

And this is the recital of the most heroic and fascinating chapter in all the history of Urantia, the story of the evolution, life struggles, death, and eternal survival of the unique parents of all mankind. ⁷

In the quote above the Higher Beings states that Andon and Fonta received recognition at the time of the adjudication of Urantia (earth) upon the arrival of the Planetary Prince. This prince known in the heaven worlds as Caligastia. He is the one Jesus referenced to when he said: “Now is the judgment of this world: “Now shall the prince of this world be cast out John 12:31.”

During the time of the adjudication of planet new dispensations are adopted. Also at this time, there is the resurrection of the dead, those who were in a suspended animation-like state, without the body of course; they will receive new bodies, only the soul and personality survive the resurrection. Some may be in this state for hundreds of years before they awaken; it seems to them they were asleep for about eight hours. They are brought forth and given council, then sent to their proper place. The twins were sent to the mansion worlds where they were taught subjects we couldn’t imagine even in our wildest fantasies, and they continue to evolve. Those mansion worlds are no doubt the ones Jesus was talking about when he mentioned: John 14:2, “In my Father house are many mansions.”

According to the Higher Beings, there are seven of these mansion worlds we humans must traverse after departing from earth, that’s if we make the grade. It is my belief these mansion worlds are the same place some have experienced in their Near-Death Experiences (NDEs) and reported taken to these beautiful places; they didn’t want to come back to earth. People who have had an NDE claim the beautiful beings they saw told them after our demise on this planet we will visit those worlds and continue our evolution.

In The Urantia Book, while Jesus was ordaining his apostles, he mentioned near death experience NDEs. *Now that you are ambassadors of my Father’s Kingdom. And further down it states: It is not enough that you live as you were before this hour, but henceforth must you live as those who tasted the glories of a better life and have been sent back to earth as Ambassadors of the Sovereign of that new and better world.* (Paper 140, section 3, paragraph 1,) of The Urantia Book. This information was recorded around 1934, way before the academics started their investigation of the strange phenomenon of NDE. And even today many people are writing about their NDEs. A good example is a neurosurgeon, Dr. Eben Alexander. He contracted some disease that put him in a coma for five or six days. Sometime in 2008 during his sickness, he had an NDE. He wrote an excellent book after his experience, titled Proof of Heaven. All these people that returned to life tried to explain there is no death as we understand it that life is a continuum. We are here to spiritualize our minds. The doing of God’s will is the secret to survival and perfection in survival.

After the twins had finished their edification of the seven Mansion Worlds, they proceeded to Jurusem, which is the headquarter world of Satania, our local system with a thousand planets. Mostly occupied according to those Higher Beings, and once ruled by Lucifer. It won't be long before we analyze the Lucifer rebellion. The previous quote mentioned on Jerusem, Andon and Fonta fused with their Thought Adjuster (the God within), it states in The Urantia Book, once a person fused with their Thought Adjuster he/she is indeed a child of God, just as those Higher Beings, and there is no more going out. In other words, there is little chance of them failing. Fonta and Andon are the first two people on earth to receive Thought Adjusters, (a fragment of God the Spirit within). The Urantia Book states: *There is something real, something of human evolution, something additional to the Mystery Monitor (The God within), which survives death. This newly appearing entity is the soul, and it survives the death of both your physical body and the material mind. This entity is the conjoint child of the combined life and efforts of the human you in liaison with the divine you, the Adjuster. This child of human and divine parentage constitutes the surviving element of terrestrial origin: it is the morontia self, the immortal soul.*

This child of persisting meaning and surviving value is wholly unconscious during the period from death to repersonalization and is in the keeping of the seraphic destiny guardian throughout this season of waiting. You will not function as a conscious being, following death, until you attain the new consciousness of morontia on the mansion world of Satania. ⁸

Elsewhere in the book, it states: Just as a butterfly emerges from the caterpillar stage, so the real personality of human beings appears on the mansion worlds, for the first time revealed apart from their one-time enshrinement in the material flesh. On the first mansion world, we'll receive our first morontia body.

Most in the Western World were taught it's the soul that enters the body at birth. But according to The Urantia Book, it is the personality that enters the body, sometimes before the child is born.

Moreover, the genetic difference between humans and chimps is said to be less than 2% according to the geneticists. They can't understand from a physiological point of view how humans and chimps are so closely related, and they can't account for such intellectual and psychological difference; they are puzzled.

But if they searched through the philosophy of the ancient Hindu and several other old records, they would discover that sometime during humanity's ancient past when man evolved into human beings and gifted with a fragment of the Spirit of God. In 1 Corinthians 3:16 you'll find the statement: "Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you?" Jesus also mentioned in Luke 17:21, "The kingdom of heaven is within you."

It's the reason geneticists cannot figure this all out. And they won't figure it out until they accept the fact that the Spirit of God dwells in humanity. The spirit of God is the reason we humans are unique. You will also find in Genesis 1:26: "Let us make man, in our image after our likeness." The likeness is the Spirit of God in man.

I have recently discovered something amazing. The genius in humanity originates from the God within. Humanity has paid little attention to the God within throughout history. The God within is not the same in everyone. Those Gods within have had different kind of experience. I believe the only place you can find this information is in The Urantia Book which has about 40 pages about the God within.

And is the main reason for the commandment “Thou shall not kill.” People don’t realize the negative energy they accumulate and must answer for when they disregard this law. We need to pay more attention to the requirements of God; ignorance is no excuse. You reap what you sow. Here is what the Advanced Beings had to say about the subject. In this quote, the morontial self is the soul. Morontial is that phase of universe reality between the material and the spiritual realms.

And as you are the human parent, so is the Adjuster the divine parent of the real you, your higher and advancing self, your better morontial and future spiritual self. And it is this evolving morontial soul that the judges and censor discern when they decree your survival and pass you upward to new worlds and never-ending existence in eternal liaison with your faithful partner God—the Adjuster.

The Adjusters are the eternal ancestors, and the divine originals of your evolving immortal soul; they are the unceasing urge that leads man to attempt mastery of the material and present existence in the light of the spiritual and future career. The Monitors (Adjusters) are the prisoners of undying hope, the founts of everlasting progression, and how they do enjoy communicating with their subjects in direct channels! How they enjoy when they can dispense with symbols and other methods of indirection and flash their message straight to the intellect of their human partner!

As I analyze and ponder the concept of those Higher Beings, their ideas and in-depth psychological analysis of humanity make a great deal of sense to me. On paper 108, section 2 paragraph 1, of The Urantia Book, those Advance Beings allege the Thought Adjuster enters the minds of humans just before their six birthdays.

Such Mansion Worlds are not our destination. We continue our evolution until we reach Paradise where the ultimate resides. Andon and Fonta granted special permission to return to the first Mansion World to welcome the pilgrims from Urantia (earth) to the heavenly spheres. Can you imagine the first parents of all humanity greeting you to the heavenly worlds?

According to those Higher Beings, there are seven stages of our ascending universe career. After death, all survivors go to the Mansion Worlds. The only difference is some sleep longer than others. Of the seven steps, I will quote the second and seventh stages. There are unique details in those two stages you shouldn't miss. I wouldn't want to miss them. I am inclined to believe, for humans to traverse those seven stages after transitioning it will take perhaps millions of years, but we will have until eternity.

Sleeping survivors

All mortals of survival status in the custody of personal guardians of destiny pass through the portals of natural death and on the third period (the third day) personalize on the mansion worlds. Those accredited beings that have, for any reason, been unable to attain that level of intelligence mastery and endowment of spirituality which would entitle them to personal guardians cannot thus go immediately and directly to the mansion worlds. Such surviving soul must rest in unconscious sleep until the judgment day of a new epoch, a new dispensation, the coming of a Son of God to call the rolls of the age and adjudicate the realm, and this is the general practice through all Nebadon. It was said of Christ Michael that, when he ascended on high at the conclusion of his work on earth, “He led a great multitude of captives.” And these captives were sleeping survivors from the days of Adam to the day of the master’s resurrection on Urantia.

The passing of time is no moments to sleeping mortals; they are wholly unconscious and oblivious to the length of their rest. On reassembly of the personality at the end of an age, those who have slept five thousand years will react no differently than those who have rested five days. Aside from this time delay these survivors pass on through the ascension regime identically with those who avoid the longer or shorter sleep of death.

These dispensational classes of world pilgrims are utilized for group morontia activities in the work of the local universes. There is a great advantage in the mobilization of such enormous groups: they are thus kept together for long periods of effective service.”¹⁰

Paradise Arrivals

On reaching Paradise with residential status, you begin the progressive course in divinity and absonity. Your resident on Paradise signifies that you have found God and that you are to be mustered into the Mortal Corps of the Finality. Of all the creatures of the grand universe, only those that are Father fused is mustered into the Mortal Corps of the Finality. Only such individuals take the Finaliter oath. Other beings of Paradise perfection or attainment may be temporarily attached to this finality corps, but they are not of eternal assignment to the unknown and unrevealed mission of this accumulating host of the evolutionary and perfected veterans of time and peace.

Paradise arrivals are accorded a period of freedom, after which they begin their associations with seven groups of primary supernaphim. They are designated Paradise graduates when they have finished their course with the conductors of worship and then, as finalities, are assigned on observational and co-operative to the end of the far-flung creation. As yet there seems to be no specific or settled employment for the Mortal Corps of Finaliters, though they serve in many capacities on worlds settled in light and life.

If there should be no future or unrevealed destiny for the Mortal Corps of the Finality, the present assignment of these ascendant beings would be altogether adequate and glorious. Their present destiny wholly justifies the universal plan of evolutionary ascent. But the future age of the evolution of the spheres of outer space will undoubtedly further elaborate, and with more repleteness divinely illuminate, the wisdom and loving-kindness of the Gods in the execution of their divine plan of human survival and mortal ascension.”¹¹

With the knowledge of The Urantia Book, we can prepare ourselves for our next existence in the Mansion Worlds, the worlds that Jesus mentioned in John 14:2. We will traverse those mansions and learn of higher realms. There our joy will exceed our understanding.

Chapter 2

When Higher Beings Came to Earth

The Transporters

In Ezekiel, Chapter 1, of the Bible Ezekiel describes seeing some object, and somehow, he found himself in a strange world, and he tried to explain what he saw. According to The Urantia Book, see paper 39 section 5, paragraph 5, some of the angels known as Seraphim act as transporters; they serve the individual planets and are called planetary transporters.

Those transported are known as enseraphimed beings. The transporters stop by different planets as guests and have custody of their enseraphim being. They stop by for rest after having traveled across light-years of space. The Higher Beings claim there is many Seraphim, stationed on our planet. Of course, they are talking about different dimensions and higher vibrations.

The Higher Beings say our conventional ideas about angels are fragments of our imagination and derived in the following manner. During moments before physical death, a strange reflective phenomenon periodically occurs in the human mind, and this dimming consciousness seems to visualize the form of attending angels. And suddenly translated into the human concepts of angels, and some survive to tell their story, as we often have heard about near-death experiences. They continue saying our erroneous ideas taken from the old ideas that angels must have wings to move through the air the way they do. However, human beings have, on occasion, been allowed to observe Seraphim preparing for takeoff, and these experiences have helped in determining humans' concept of angels. Following is what Ezekiel appeared to have experienced.

From the way the experience described in The Urantia Book, it appears the transport Seraph use some instrument they call the carriage of life, but they are that instrument. During this occasion, as the Higher Beings explained in watching a transport Seraphim getting ready to receive a passenger for interplanetary transport, there appears what seems to be a double set of wings extending from the head to the foot of the angel. But these wings are only energy insulators or friction shields. Those who are being enseraphimed from one world to another are put into a deep sleep. The transport Seraphim move into a horizontal position right above the universal energy field of the planet; these energy fields are on the verge of being discovered by our scientists, and they are called energy grids. While the energy shields are wide open, the sleeping person skillfully deposited by the assistants officiating seraphic, directly on top of the transport Seraphim. Then, both the upper and lower pairs of the shields are carefully closed and adjusted. This carriage of life appears to be the transport seraphim with additional equipment.

Currently, according to The Urantia Book, under the effects of the transformers and transmitters, a strange metamorphosis begins to take place as the Seraphim are made ready to swing into what they call energy currents of the universe circuits. To all outward appearances, it looks as though the transport Seraphim grows pointed at both ends and becomes enclosed in an odd light of amber hue. In a short time, it is impossible

to tell the transport Seraphim from the enseraphim being. When all is ready for departure, the chief transporter makes the final inspection of the carriage of life; he carries out the test to make sure the angel is encircuited correctly, then he announces the traveler is adequately enseraphimed, and the energies are adjusted. The two beings are insulated, and everything is ready for the departing flash.

Two mechanical controllers then took their positions. Currently, the transport angel has a transparent vibrating torpedo-like shape—an outline of glistening luminosity. During this moment, the transport dispatcher of the realm summons the auxiliary batteries of living energy, usually 1,000 in number, whatever that is, as he announces the destination of the transport. The transport dispatcher reaches out and touches the closest point of the seraphim carriage, which shoots forward with lightning speed leaving a trail of celestial luminosity. In less than ten minutes, the breathtaking spectacle will be lost even to the reinforced seraphim vision.

Those transport seraphim move across light years of space in a short time. We, in the physical world, cannot imagine how fast the Higher Beings can travel. The Urantia Book states that Seraphim travels at around 559,000 miles per second, an unbelievable amount of speed. When I read in quantum physics that there are electrons that react to other particles instantaneously that are light-years apart, I realized how little I know.

One Million Years Ago

The Urantia Book states that our ancient ancestors became humans around one million years ago after a long process of mutating through the animal stages. At this time the Spirit of God came and indwelt the first two humans' beings. The heaven or higher worlds called the male Andon and the female Fonta. When the Spirit of God came and indwelt in the first two human beings, they were no longer considered just animals but human beings. They were distinguished from their animal parents because they were able to think for themselves and make their own decisions, not rely on instincts alone. Those two beings were born suddenly from animal parents. Again, there were no missing links, say The Urantia Book. Becoming human was planted into the twins' original ancestors DNA millions of years before. The Urantia Book mentioned that animals don't have a soul, they are not able to know God.

After the Spirit of God came and indwelt in the mind of humanity, the soul was created. The God within and the essence of the human being are the creators of the soul; they are the soul parents as mentioned before. *And as you are the human parent, so is the Adjuster (the God within) the divine parent of the real you, your higher and advancing self, your better morontial and future spiritual self. And it is this evolving morontial soul that the judges and censors discern when they decree your survival and pass you upward to new worlds and never-ending existence in eternal liaison with your faithful partner — God, the Adjuster.* ¹

The Urantia Book calls the God within the Thought Adjuster. The Thought Adjuster directs our minds in the right direction if we allow it to do so. Everything the Thought Adjuster does we have to give our consent in some way we don't fully understand. We are never forced to do God's will. Genesis 1:26, of the Bible, states: "Let us make man in our image after our likeness." The likeness refers to the God within, not the physical body. When the individuals develop to a certain degree in their evolving and become one with the God within then, they will be in the likeness of God and his higher Sons. Jesus said: in John 17:11 "That they may be one as we are one." Jesus was one with God.

Genesis 1:27 states: "So God created man in his image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them." He created male and female equal in the beginning, no rib mentioned. I believe the Jewish scribes added the rib section to the Bible. Today we know in the modern world a man has the same number of ribs as women.

The Higher Beings tell us the first one of our humanities who fused with their Thought Adjuster (the God within) was Enoch. In the Bible, Genesis 5:24, it mentions: "And Enoch walked with God: and he was not, for God took him." After this strange experience in the Bible, no one ever heard from Enoch again. When one fuses with the God within, he/she becomes an entirely new person. If someone happens to merge with the God within while still on the planet, their body will be annihilated consumed in fire.

It is a long trek for humanity and its spiritual development, to the human mind this may take a long time, but to the Higher Being that exists for millions of years, it is relatively short. Most humans are not evolved enough to fuse with their Thought Adjuster (the God within), but when they reach the higher worlds, they will have plenty of time.

The Origin of the Color Races

Around 500 thousand years after the appearance of the first two humans Andon and Fonta on earth, the races of color appeared. There were six different colors of children appearing in the same family. At this time people called the Bandonan of the northwestern Highland of India was involved in another tribal struggle which they had many times before. More than 100 years this warfare persisted. When the long battle was over only about 100 families were left. The survivors were the most intelligent and desirable of all the living descendants of Andon and Fonta, the first two humans on our planet. About this time a strange thing began to occur. A couple living in the northwestern part of the Highland region of India suddenly started to produce unusually intelligent children. They were called the Sangik family, the ancestors of all the colored races on the planet. This couple had 19 children in all. Not only did these children have above average intelligence, but their skin also had a unique tendency to change color when exposed to sunlight. Among these 19 children, there were five Red, two Orange, four Yellow, two Green, four Blue, and two Indigo. Those colors became more outstanding as the children aged. When they later mated with their fellow tribesperson, all of their offsprings tended to inherit the colors of the Sangik parent.

At the same time, the color races were coming into existence; another phenomenon was taking place. The one called the prince of this world (whom I mentioned earlier) appeared on our planet. All this took place around 500 thousand years after the twins, Andon and Fonta, the first two humans on our planet were born.

The Higher Beings informed us that it was most unusual for the evolutionary races of color to appear all at once and mainly in one family. According to those Higher Beings, the races of color usually appeared one after the other in different families. The Red race, being the first to evolve, roamed the planet for many years before the other races made their appearances.

1. The Red Race. It's said that the red race was remarkable; they were in many ways more advanced than Andon and Fonta. They were the most intelligent of the Sangik group and were the first of the Sangik children to develop tribal civilization and government. They were always monogamous. In later years, they had severe and prolonged problems with their Yellow brethren in Asia. They were helped by their invention of

the bow and arrow. The Redman had unfortunately inherited the tendency of their ancestors to fight among themselves. It weakened them so that the Yellowman was able to push them off the continent of Asia.

Around 85 thousand years ago, an almost pure group of the Red tribe went across to North America. Soon afterward, the Bering Land Strait sank, isolating them. No member of the red race ever returned to Asia. But they left behind quite a legacy of their stock in Siberia, China, Central Asia, India, and Europe.

When the Redman crossed over to North America, they took with them many of the teachings and traditions of their early origin. The Red man's immediate ancestors were in touch and familiar with the world headquarters of the planetary prince. But soon after reaching North America, the Red tribes forgot the teachings of their fore-parents, and there occurred a decline in their intellectual and spiritual culture. It wasn't long after reaching North America that the Redman returned to fighting fiercely among themselves. It appears these tribal wars were going to cause the extinction of this remnant of the comparatively pure red race. Because of this retrogression, it seemed imminent that the Red race was heading for destruction. Around 65 thousand years ago, Onamonolonton appeared as their leader and spiritual deliverer. He brought temporary peace to these Americans, and he revived their worship of the Great Spirit. Onamonolonton lived to be 96 years old. His headquarters located among the magnificent redwood trees of California. Many of his later descendants have come down in our times as the Blackfoot Indians. As time passed, the teachings of Onamonolonton became something of the past. The Redman resumed his self-destructive warfare. After reaching America from Asia, the North America Red race never again encountered any other world influence (except the Eskimo) until later discovered by the White man. The Redman could not rule the White man, and he wouldn't willingly serve him.

2. The Orange Race. The most peculiar thing about the orange race was their unique desire to build. They would build any and everything. They would make huge mounds of stone to see which tribe could create the most massive mound. The Orange race was not a progressive people. They profited from the school of the prince and sent groups there for training. Therefore, the Orange race was the first to follow the coast south to Africa, and westward by way of the Mediterranean Sea. But they never secured a place to stay in Africa and were wiped out of existence by the Green man. Before their demise, these people lost the culture and spiritual place they had acquired. There was a great revival of higher learning around 300 thousand years ago because of the great leadership of Porshunta. Porshunta was the mastermind of those unfortunate people. He ministered to his people when their headquarters were at Armageddon, a mountain region in the Middle East. The last outstanding struggle between the Green and the Orange man took place around the area of the lower Nile Valley in Egypt. A long battle waged for almost 100 years. Afterward, there were very few of the Orange race left. The scattered remnants absorbed by the Green race and the later arriving Indigo race. As a race, the orange people disappeared around 100 thousand years ago.

3. The Yellow Race. The primitive Yellow tribes were the first ones to give up the chase or packing up and following the herd. They were the first to establish settled communities and develop a home life based on agriculture. Intellectually, they were not as smart as the Red race, although socially, they proved themselves more intelligent than all the Sangik races. They did not kill off their people as most of the other races did. Their culture evolved and fostered civilization. Because they developed various methods of living together in relative peace, they were able to drive the red race out of Asia as they expanded their territory.

They traveled far from the influence of what was known then as the spiritual headquarters of the world. It was in this area of Mesopotamia where Caligastia, the prince of this world, established his settlement. The Yellow race drifted into great darkness during the time of Lucifer and Caligastia rebellion. But there was a period when the yellow race saw a little light. About 100 thousand years ago, a great man of their tribe, known as Singlonton, became the leader. He proclaimed the worship of the one Truth. The survival of such a large number of the yellow race is due to their intertribal peacefulness. Since the time of their great leader Singlonton to modern times, the yellow race has been known as the more peaceful nation on earth.

4. The Green Race. The Green race is said to have been the least able of the primitive races. Their constant migration in different directions weakened them. But before their dispersion, their tribes experienced a great revival of their culture around 300 thousand years ago due to the leadership of the one they called Fantad.

The green race split into three major divisions: the northern tribes were subdued, enslaved and absorbed by the blue and yellow race; the eastern group merged with the Indian people of that time; and the tribes that were in the south entered Africa, where they destroyed their almost equally inferior orange cousins. In many ways, the green and orange men was evenly matched. Both carried the strains of the giant, and many of their leaders were eight and nine feet in height. The giant strains of the green race mostly confined to the area now known as Egypt. The Green race left over was absorbed by the Indigo race. The Indigo race was the last of the color race to leave from the original Sangik center where the races initially dispersed.

5. The Blue Race. According to the Higher Beings that sponsored these papers, the blue race was a great race. They invented the spear and worked out the basics of many of the arts of modern civilization. The Blue race was said to have the brainpower of the Red race and the soul sentiments of the Yellow race. The early Blue race responded to the teachings of Prince Caligastia and his staff, but then fell into great confusion after the betrayal of Caligastia and the majority of his team. Like most of the primitive race, they never fully recovered from the turmoil caused by the Caligastia downfall, nor did they completely overcome their tendency to fight among themselves.

Around 500 years after the downfall of Caligastia, there was a widespread revival of learning and religion, which was somewhat primitive, but real and beneficial. The leader of this revival was named Orlandof; he became a great teacher among the blue race. Orlandof led many of his tribes back to the worship of the true God under the name of the Super Chief. It was the most significant advancement of the blue race until the later days when they received biological improvement from the Adamic stock.

The European researchers and explorers of the Old Stone Age have mostly dealt with unearthing the tools, bones and art crafts in places like the caves in Lascaux France, left behind by the Blue race or Cro-Magnon that stayed in Europe until relatively recent times. The so-called White races are the descendant of the blue race, modified by a slight mixture of the yellow and red race, and they were up-stepped by assimilating portions of the Violet race. (The Violet race was started by Adam and Eve. One of their primary purposes for coming to our planet was to uplift humanity biologically, but because of their default, humans has suffered immensely.)

When I started reading paper 64 concerning the evolutionary races of color, I was a little skeptical about accepting its different colors. I then had to rely on my memory. I recalled the Hindu Indians for thousands of years depicting their many gods as being Blue, and according to The

Urantia Book, a remnant of the blue race invaded India thousands of years ago after they were uplifted biologically by the Violet race. Because they were so far advanced in comparison to Badonon offspring, they no doubt considered them as gods. I sincerely believe the Blue race started the caste system after entering India many years ago after the Violet race uplifted their genes.

While I pondered the different color races, reminded of a birthmark I have on my left thigh, most of the times it has a pinkish color, my complexion is tan. This birthmark is about three inches long and around two inches wide. When I am chilly, for example, after taking a shower, the birthmark turns a soft violet color. I know that color couldn't appear on my body unless already embedded in my DNA. After seeing my skin turn violet, I then realized that it is a high possibility that there could have been that color race on our planet. Sometimes now since reading The Urantia Book, I look at my birthmark when it is a violet color, and I wonder if it's an indication that part of my roots stems from the Violet race. The Red race, the North America Indian, the Yellow people of China, and the Indigo Races of Africa, are still with us; this is all that's left of the original six color races.

6. The Indigo Race. The section that disturbs most people, especially people of color, and because of it, they reject the entire Urantia book, denying themselves a great opportunity to expand their state of consciousness to understand higher dimensions. However, I admit that when I first read paper 64, it bothered me until I tried to distinguish it from those Higher Beings' point of view. Since this section is so controversial, I feel compelled to quote it:

As the Redman was the most advanced of all the Sangik people, so the black men were the least progressive, they were the last to migrate from their homeland homes. They journey to Africa, taking possession of the continent, and have ever since remained there except when they have been forcibly taken away, from age to age, as slaves.

Isolated in Africa, the Indigo race made little advance until the days of Orvonon, when they experienced a great spiritual awakening. While they later almost entirely forgot the "God of Gods" proclaimed by Orvonon, they did not entirely lose the desire to worship the unknown; at least they maintained a form of worship up to a few thousand years ago.

Notwithstanding their backwardness, these Indigo people have exactly the same standing before the celestial as any other earthly race. ² This is the story of how people of color appeared on our planet. If one just picked up The Urantia Book and started reading paper 64 on people of color, they would conclude that the so-called Higher Beings are prejudiced. Because of our preconditioned racial attitudes, we read more into this paper than the Higher Beings intended when they planted the seeds of life in the primordial oceans. They planned to bring forth creatures that had a will of their own, and that would be able to think and make decisions and develop a state of consciousness that one day would be able to rise up into higher dimensions. They were not concerned about our petty racial attitudes.

In an ordinary human family where there are several children, there is usually one child more intelligent than the rest of their siblings, but it doesn't mean that they are better than the rest of the children. Humanity is nothing but a huge family, whether we understand it or not. People tend to pick out what they don't like about paper 64 and make an issue of it. But if they read the entire book, they would find statements such as this on the bottom of paper 82, section 6, paragraph 2, the last paragraphs, where those Higher Beings said: *Of the six Sangik races there were primary and there were secondary. Though the primary races blue, red, and yellow were in many respects superior to the three secondary peoples;*

*it should be remembered that these secondary races had many desirable traits which would have considerably enhanced the primary people if their better strains could have been absorbed. And further on: Biologically considered, the secondary Sangik were in some respect superior to the primary races. And they continued, After all the real jeopardy of the human species is to be found in the unrestrained multiplication of the inferior and degenerated strains of the various civilized people rather than in any supposed danger of their interbreeding.*³

The fact of animal evolutionary origin does not attach stigma to any personality in the sight of the universe as that is the exclusive method of producing one of two basic types of finite intelligent will creatures. When the heights of perfection and eternity are attained, all the more honor to those who began at the bottom and joyfully climbed the ladder of life, round by round, and who when they do reach the heights of glory, will have gained a personal experience which embodies an actual knowledge of every phase of life from bottom to top.

*In all this is shown the wisdom of the creators. It would be just as easy for the Universal Father to make all mortal perfect beings, to impart perfection by his divine word. But that would deprive them of the wonderful experience of the adventure and training associated with the long and gradual inward climb, an experience to be had only by those who are so fortunate as to begin at the very bottom of living existence.*⁴

Since the year 2003 and the decoding of the human genome, scientists have found that many darker skinned people are sometimes more European than some whites are and vice versa. The scientists are also saying that the DNA of all races are 99.9 percent the same. It was brought out in scientific research that the difference is only skin deep. On paper 111, section 7, paragraph 4, of The Urantia Book it states: The higher human races of Urantia are complexly admixed; they are a blend of many races and stocks of different origin. Also, page 920, paragraph 5, it states: *Hybridization of superior and dissimilar stocks is the secret of the creation of new and more vigorous strains. And this is true of plants, animals, and the human species. Hybridization augments vigor and increases fertility. Race mixture of the average or superior strata of various people greatly increases creative potential, as is shown in the present population of the United States of North America.*

In The Urantia Book, they mention that the last will be first and the first last. If we look at the Bible, we will find in Luke 13:30 Jesus refers to the Kingdom of Heaven. He mentioned that in time, the last would be first. I plead with those that are true seekers; The Urantia Book has excellent information about our Heavenly Father and our future goals. Do not cut off your nose to spite your face. Some of us fail to comprehend, in comparison to the angels and higher beings, that we are “all” at the bottom of the ladder. I don’t see anything that would make us so proud. When we reach our goal, then we will have something to “kick-up our heels about.”

Furthermore, this is what Jesus had to say about the subject while talking to one of his young friends: One day while resting at lunch, about halfway to Tarentum, Ganid asked Jesus a direct question as to what he thought of India’s caste system. Jesus said: *Though human beings differ in many ways, the one from another, before God and in the spiritual world all mortals stand on an equal footing. There are only two groups of mortals in the eyes of God: those who desire to do his will and those who do not. As the universe looks upon an inhabited world, it likewise discerns two great classes: those who know God and those who do not. Those who cannot know God are reckoned among the animals of any given realm. Mankind can appropriately be divided into many classes in accordance with differing qualifications, as they may be viewed physically, mentally, socially, vocationally, or morally, but as these different classes of mortals appear before the judgment bar of God, they stand on an equal footing; God is truly no respecter of persons. Although you cannot escape the recognition of differential human abilities and endowments in matters of*

intellectual, social, and moral, you should make no such distinctions in the spiritual brotherhood of men when assembled for worship in the presence of God. ⁵

Higher Worlds

The higher worlds sent a being they called Caligastia as the prince of our world, with a corps of assistants and administrative helpers. He is the prince Jesus spoke of in John 16:11. At the end of paper 66 in The Urantia Book, it states that a Melchizedek of Nebadon presented it. The Melchizedeks are another higher order of Sons of God; one of them incarnated on our planet during the time of Abraham. In the Bible (Hebrews 7:1-3), it mentions that Melchizedek was without a mother or father without descent, which is an indication that he was not of this world. (Nebadon is what the higher world calls our local universe).

At the head of this corps of assistants and administrators is another High Son of God named Daligastia, the associate assistant of the Planetary Prince. The Planetary Prince staff included many angels and a host of other celestial beings that came for the benefit of humanity to advance humanity's interest and promote the welfare of humans. But from our standpoint, Melchizedek says the most interesting of those who came to our planet were the corporeal members of the prince's staff often referred to as the Caligastia 100. After the rebellion of Lucifer, 60 of this group who rebelled along with Lucifer were eventually called the Anunnaki by the Sumerians whom we in the West recognize as sons of God of Genesis 6:4. The rematerialized members of the prince's staff were chosen by Caligastia himself from 785,000 ascendant citizens of Jerusem who volunteered for the adventure on earth. Those citizens of Jerusem did not merge with their Thought Adjuster. The Urantia Book did not say why. They had gone through the experience of the mansion worlds of which Jesus spoke. Each one of the chosen 100 were from different planets, none was originally from earth. When Andon and Fonta, the twins, died and were resurrected, they were taken to the mansion worlds to continue evolving. Again, these mansions are the same ones Jesus spoke of in John 14:2: "In my Father's house are many mansions." When they finished with their education in the mansion worlds, they wanted to return to Earth to help the race they brought into being but were not allowed to do so. They eventually went on to Jerusem which is the place we call heaven. In the book of Revelation of the Bible, John called it the New Jerusalem (Revelation 21:2). The Higher Beings say no one can return to the planet from which they originated after their demise. When someone claims to have seen their departed relative or friend, what they saw was their friend or relative's electromagnetic double. (Scientists of today are doing great work in detecting these electromagnetic fields.)

In Genesis 6:4 there is the statement: "There were giants in the earth in those days; and also, after that, when the sons of God came in unto the daughters of men and bare children unto them some became mighty men that were of old, men of renown." As mentioned, those sons of God are the same ones the Sumerians called Anunnaki (those who from heaven came). For them to have children with humans, they had to have a body like that of humans with human genes. The Melchizedek tells us that the Caligastia 100 could not use the bodies they used on the higher world in our world. Bodies had to be created for them by surgeons from Avalon. A universe neighbor to our universe, who volunteered their services. They took DNA from the more advanced tribes of Earth performed genetic engineering and created bodies for those Caligastia 100 otherwise, the tribes of the Earth would not have been able to see them. After the creation of their bodies, the spirit of God breathed the breath of life into those forms, and the Caligastia 100 incarnated into them, and they became living beings, just as we incarnated into our bodies a little

before we were born. The sons and daughters of man were never able to see the Planetary Prince or his assistant, Daligastia; they stayed in a dimension where humans were not able to see them. But the Caligastia 100 were able to see the prince and his assistant after their materialization.

The 100 volunteers were brought by seraphic transporter directly from Jerusem to Earth, and upon arrival, they were held in a sleep-like state until they were provided with personality forms of dual nature for unique planetary service. These were actual bodies of flesh and blood but also attuned to the circuits of the system of Satantia (the system of 1,000 planets that Lucifer once ruled).

The Melchizedek mentioned that before the arrival of these 100 Jerusem citizens, two supervising Life Carriers were on Earth (these beings were in another dimension on our planet). Had previously perfected their plans to petition Jerusem and Edentia (Edentia is headquarters to the constellation of our system of planets) for permission to transplant the life plasma of 100 selected survivors of Andon and Fonta stock into the material bodies created for the corporeal members of the prince's staff. The request was granted on Jerusem and approved on Edentia. We, humans, may wonder about this technique, that in 10 or 15 days, those Caligastia 100 had human bodies created by the surgeons from Avalon somewhat more advanced than our own. Because the bodies of the Caligastia 100 were made with plasm of humans, they were able to have children by them. We humans must take into consideration that the Caligastia 100 had already passed through a world like ours and had experienced the seven mansion worlds. They had the same experiences as Fonta and Andon and became citizens of Jerusem. All they had to do was to incarnate into bodies provided for them. We shouldn't wonder about these Higher Being's capabilities as some of these beings' civilizations are perhaps a billion years old. We do not know what they can do. Look at what our scientists have accomplished in the last 30 years cloning, genetic engineering, and the cracking of the human genome and such. Because some of us humans limit ourselves, we tend to restrict others. The Life Carriers chose 50 males and 50 females of the Fonta and Andon posterity, which represented the survival of the best strains of that unique race. They were assembled from widely separated places by exceptional means. They were gathered around the Planetary Prince's headquarters where the 100 humans were given into the hands of highly skilled volunteers commissioned from Avalon who supervised the material extraction of a portion of the life plasma of Andon and Fonta's descendants. This living plasma was then transferred to the material bodies constructed for the use of the 100 Jerusemite members of the Prince's staff.

Melchizedek tells us that the transaction along with the literal creation of bodies for the Caligastia 100, was the beginning of numerous legends. Many become confused with the later tradition concerning the way Adam and Eve's bodies were created on our planet.

The Planetary Prince's headquarters was in the Persian Gulf area; later, this region was called Mesopotamia. The climate and prairie were favorable for the prince, his staff, and his assistant. That environment today is very different. It was necessary to have a pleasant atmosphere to induce primitive humans to take specific initial steps toward culture and civilization.

According to The Urantia Book, the headquarters of the Planetary Prince was a beautiful but straightforward city, enclosed by walls 40 feet high. The world center of culture was called Dalamatia, in honor of Daligastia. The town was laid out in 10 subdivisions with the headquarters' mansions of 10 councils for the corporeal staff situated at the center of these subdivisions. At the very center was the temple of the unseen Father. The administrative headquarters of the Prince and his staff were arranged in 12 chambers surrounding the temple itself.

The buildings at Dalamatia were all one-story structures, except for the council's headquarters, which was two stories high. The temple of the Father of all was a small building three stories high. The city represented the best of those early days structures made of bricks. The surrounding tribes significantly improved the building of homes and the construction of villages because of the Dalmatian's example.

Close to the Prince's headquarters, there were representatives of all the colors of the human races of that period. The students for the prince's schools were recruited from the nearby tribes. Although these early schools were crude, they provided all they could do for the humans of that age.

The prince's corporeal staff regularly gathered about them the superior individuals of the surrounding tribes, and after teaching and inspiring these students, they were sent back as teachers and leaders of their tribes. The arrival of the prince's staff had a great impression on these primitive tribes. It took almost 1,000 years for the news of the prince and his team to spread abroad. The tribes near the Mesopotamian headquarters were tremendously inspired by the teachings and conduct of the 100 sojourners on our planet earth. Quite a bit of our mythology grew out of the legends of those early days when the members of the prince's staff were personalized on Urantia as superhumans.

The Melchizedek writes that a severe handicap to the excellent influence of such extra-planetary help is the tendency of mortals to regard them as gods. Aside from the technique of their appearance on earth, the Caligastia 100, 50 men and 50 women did not rely on supernatural powers or superhuman manipulation. The Bible often called men and women sons of God to see Hebrew 12:6-7.

The 100, although they were corporeal beings and relatively human, embodied the actual life plasma of one of the human races, Andonite's life plasma of Urantia. These 100 members of the prince's staff were divided equally as to sex and according to their previous mortal status. Each person of the 100 can become parents to a new order of physical beings but being instructed they could only have children under certain circumstances.

The 100 took the same food as the people of earth, only with this difference: the recreated bodies of this group were satisfied by a non-flesh diet. It was one of the reasons they chose their residence to be in a warm region that had many nuts and fruits. The practice of subsisting on non-flesh dates to the times of the Caligastia 100; this custom spread near and far and affected the eating habits of many surrounding tribes.

According to the information in The Urantia Book, the Caligastia 100 were personally immortal; they were undying. Circulating through their material form were the antidotal compliments of the life currents of the system that was provided by the Tree of Life. Had they not lost contact with the life circuits through rebellion, they would have lived on indefinitely until the arrival of Adam and Eve, or until they were later released to resume their interrupted journey to Havona and Paradise. Havona, the central and divine universe, was an eternal wholly created, and perfect planetary family containing one billion worlds arranged in seven concentric circuits contiguous to and surrounding Paradise, the ultimate heaven.

The antidotal compliments of the Satantia life current derived from the fruit of life, a shrub of Edentia which was sent to the earth by the Most Highs of Norlatiadek at the time of Caligastia's arrival. In those days of Dalamatia, this tree grew in the central courtyard of the temple of the unseen Father. And it was the fruit of the Tree of Life that enabled the material and otherwise mortal beings of the prince's staff to live on indefinitely if they had access to this Tree of Life. While of no value to the evolutionary races, this super-substance was quite sufficient to confer

eternal life upon the Caligastia 100 and the modified Andonite associated with them. The Andonite that contributed their human germ plasma to the members of the prince's staff had introduced into their mortal bodies the complement of the system circuits by the surgeons from Avalon and, thus, were able to live concurrently with the prince's staff, century after century, in defiance of physical death. After a while, the 100 Andonite told of their contribution to the new form of their superiors. These same 100 from the Andon tribe, were kept at headquarters as the personal attendants of the prince's corporeal staff.

After the rebellion, the Tree of Life was taken away from the 60 that rebelled they eventually died. But the 40 of the Caligastia 100 that were loyal could use the Tree of Life until they finally left the planet.

Starting at paper 66, section 5, of The Urantia Book, before the fall of Lucifer, the Caligastia 100 was organized to serve in groups of 10, or councils with ten members each. When two or more of these councils met in joint session, they were presided over by Daligastia, Caligastia's right-hand man.

1. The first of these councils was the council on food. This council was presided over by one of the 100, named Ang. This council helped the primitive human's interest in food, water, and clothes; this Council enhanced the material aspects of life for those primitive humans. They taught them how to dig wells, spring control, and irrigation. They were shown methods for the treatment of animal skin for clothing. Somewhere in the process, the early humans were taught how to weave. New ways were instructed to store food. They even learned to preserve food by cooking, drying, and smoking. This food became early man's first property, and they learned to cope with the hazards of famine.

2. The second council dealt with animal domestication and utilization. The tasks of this council were the breeding and taming of animals to help man bear his burden and for transportation. Careful breeding became a valuable source of food such as cheese, butter, and milk. The board for animal domestication and utilization was led by Bon, another of the Caligastia 100. There were several types of animals tamed during that time but are now extinct. For many years, man has lived with the dog, and the blue race had already tamed the elephant. The Caligastia corps taught man the use of the wheel. It was during this time that the pigeons were trained to send messages or calls for help. The pigeons were taken on long trips and released to test their ability to return home.

3. The advisers regarding the conquest of planetary animals. At the head of this group was one named Don. Not only was early man taught to domesticate the animals, but it was also beneficial for him to learn to protect himself against the remaining hostile creatures.

Melchizedek said the purpose of those ancient walls was to protect against ferocious beasts as well as to prevent surprise attacks by other hostile humans. The humans living outside of the walls and in the forest had to depend on tree-dwelling, stone huts, and maintained fires at night to protect themselves from animals.

4. The faculty on dissemination and conservation of knowledge. This group was constructed for educational purposes of those early ages and was presided over by one called Fad. Fad's educational method also helped in the supervision of employment and instruction to improve the processes of labor. Fad formulated the first alphabet and introduced a writing system. This alphabet consisted of 25 characters. Our early ancestors used as writing material tree bark, clay tablets, stone slab and a form of parchment made of hammered hide and crude paper-like material made from wasp nests. They had a library at Dalamatia where they kept many records that were destroyed soon after Caligastia's disloyalty. The Blue

Man was partial to using the alphabet: they made the most significant progress along this line. The Redman liked picture writing. The Yellowman preferred symbols for words and ideas, just about the same as they use today. But everything was lost during the confusion of the rebellion. It destroyed any hope humanity had of having a universal language for thousands of years.

5. The commission on industry and trade. This group was instrumental in nurturing industry within the tribes and promoting business among the various groups that were at peace. The leader of this council was called Nod. According to The Urantia Book, this is the same Nod that the Land of Nod was founded. In the Bible, (Genesis 4:16 and 17), Cain, the older son of Adam and Eve, who had murdered his brother Abel, went to the Land of Nod where he found a wife. This Council encouraged every type of primitive manufacturing. This group significantly improved these primitive peoples' standard of living by introducing new commodities that attracted the surrounding tribe's attention. The council of science and art immensely improved salt production. It was among these groups that the first of those educated at Dalamatia used the first commercial credit. From a central exchange of credit, they secured tokens, which were accepted instead of the actual object of barter. The world did not improve on this method of business for thousands of years.

6. The College of revealed religions. Earth civilization emerged out of the force of necessity and the hammer of fear. But this council led by Hap had made considerable progress in their effort to substitute creature fear (ghost worship) for Creator fear and God reverence before the confusion of the rebellion disrupted their endeavors.

The prince's staff didn't present a religion that was too complicated for the primitive mind to grasp. Hap did yield to the desire of the inhabitants of the city to establish a religious service. His group provided the Dalamatia with seven chants of worship, and they also gave daily praise. Hap and his group eventually taught them the father's prayer that was:

Father of all whose Son we honor, look down on us with favor. Deliver us from fear of all except save you. Make us a pleasure to our divine teacher and always put truth on our lips. Deliver us from violence and anger: give us respect for our elders and that which belong to our neighbors. Give us this season green pastures and fruitful flocks to gladden our hearts. We pray for the hastening of the coming of the promise up-lifter, and we would do your will on this world as others do on world beyond. ⁶

The prince's staff was limited to natural methods and ordinary means for race improvement, but they looked forward to the promised Adamic race as the goal of evolutionary growth and the attainment of the height of biologic development.

7. The guardian of health and life. This council, led by one named Lut, was concerned with the promotion of primitive hygiene and sanitation conditions. The many essential methods taught to our ancient ancestors were lost during the confusion of subsequent ages until rediscovered in the twentieth century.

The Caligastia 100 taught our ancestors the importance of cooking, boiling, or roasting food. By doing so, they avoided many sicknesses; also, cooking reduced infant mortality and helped in early weaning. Many of the early teachings of Lut's, guardians of health, persisted among the tribes of the Earth to the days of Moses, even though significantly distorted. One of the main reasons the leaders of this group had such a difficult time teaching our ancient ancestors good hygiene was because the real cause of many diseases was too small to be seen by the naked eye. Another

obstacle was that primitive humans held all fire in superstition. It took thousands of years to persuade them to burn refuse. In the meantime, they were encouraged to bury their decaying rubbish.

Before the Prince arrived, washing was considered a religious ceremony exclusively. It was difficult to get those primitives to wash their bodies as a health precaution. But finally induced the spiritual teachers to include water as part of the purification ceremonies to be practiced as noontime devotion once a week in the worship of the Father of all.

8. The planetary council on art and science. This group did a great job improving the industrial technique of early humans and elevated their concept of beauty. Their leader was called Mek. The little science and art they did practice throughout the world at that time were at its lowest ebb. But the rudiments of science were taught at Dalamatia. Pottery and decorative art were also enhanced. The idea of human beauty was improved. Music meant little until the arrival of the Violet race, the race Adam and Eve brought into existence.

It was practically impossible to get a primitive man to experiment with steam power even after the repeated attempts of their teachers. They never could overcome their fear of the explosive power of confined steam. They finally consented to work with metal and fire, although a red-hot piece of metal was a terrifying object to early man.

Mek made significant progress in advancing the culture of the Andonite and the art of the Blue Man. In fact, interbreeding of the Blue man with Andonite produced an artistically gifted type, and many of them became master sculptors. They didn't work with stone and marble, but their work of clay hardened by baking adorned the Garden of Dalamatia. There was considerable progress in the building of homes. But most of what was learned was lost in the long dark rebellion and was not recovered until modern times.

9. The governors of advanced tribal relations. This group was responsible for bringing society of that age up to the stage of statehood; the head of this group was Tut. The leaders of this group did a great job of bringing about intertribal marriages. They encouraged courtship and marriage after the couple became acquainted with each other. Their dances were made to serve valuable social ends. The advanced teachers of that primitive age taught them many competitive games, but those ancient people were severe; they displayed little humor. Few of these practices survived the planetary rebellion.

Tut and his council labored hard to promote a peaceful relationship between the tribes of primitive humans and to improve tribal government. In the area where the prince's headquarters stood, there was a more advanced culture, and these improved social relations were very helpful in influencing the more remote tribes. I will quote the final council in its entirety; it was directed by one of the Caligastia 100 called Van.

10. The Supreme Court of tribal coordination and racial cooperation. *This Supreme Court was directed by Van and was the court of appeals for all the other nine special commissions charged with the supervision of human affairs. This council was one of wide function being entrusted with all matters of earthly concern, which were not specifically given to the other group. This selected corps had been approved by the Constellation Fathers of Edentia before they were authorized to assume functions of the supreme court of Urantia.* ⁷

I believe the information about the ten councils came down to us after 200 thousand years as the ten kings of the Sumerian's King List. A list of their kings, each ruling for thousands of years. People forgot all about councils and started calling those committees' heads kings. Those

who were head of each Council led those groups for thousands of years, before Lucifer's rebellion. After the uprising, the Tree of Life was taken away from the 60 that rebelled, and they died just as the humans they came to help. The Sumerians claim those kings were from heaven (they were the celestial sons of God of Genesis 6:4.)

When the Prince and his staff arrived on our planet, the whole world was caught up in the stalemate of tradition and slavery to the mores of those days. The Caligastia 100 arrived and announced a new era for individual initiations within the human tribes. The new rules were soon interrupted by the rebellion, so the people of that time were never liberated from the slavery of customs and fashion, which still dominate our world today.

The 100 were very familiar with the culture and arts of those higher worlds. They also knew such knowledge was practically useless in a world populated by barbaric, primitive humans. But these wise beings knew not to try a sudden transformation or uplifting of the savage races of this era. The 100 were very much aware of the slow process of evolution, so they wisely refrained from radical changes modifying human life on Earth.

Each of the ten planetary commissioners acted slowly and naturally to advance the humans of that time. They planned to attract the best minds of the surrounding tribes, and after training them, they were sent back to their people as emissaries of social uplift. These 100 never imposed their mores upon another tribe even those of a superior race. They always patiently worked to uplift and advance the time-tried mores of each race. Those who worked for the betterment of a tribe or race were always a native of that tribe or race.

Again, the Dalamatia teachers were cautious not to force their new concept upon primitive humans; they said their motive was progression by evolution and not a revolution by revelation. The humans of that time spent many years acquiring what little religion and morals they had, and those superhuman Caligastia knew better than to rob them of their advances, confusing them by over-teaching and over-enlightening them.

The prince's headquarters, though very beautiful, was designed to awe the primitive humans of that age. The Higher Beings that gave us this information state that the central temple of worship and the ten council mansions of the supervising groups were works of art. The buildings where the 100 resided were a very simple models of neatness and cleanness. Everything was primitive in comparison with later-day development.

At the Prince's headquarters, there were no methods adopted that did not naturally belong to the earth. The staff of the Prince lived together as though they were husbands and wives, but they had no children of their own. The 50 patterned homes of Dalamatia always sheltered around 500 adopted little children gathered from the more advanced families of the Andonic and the Sangik races, but many of the children were orphans. They were fortunate to have had the discipline and training of those super parents. After these children had been in the Prince's school for three years (which they entered between age 13 and 15), they were eligible for marriage and ready to receive their commissions as emissaries of the Prince to needy tribes of their race.

Fad developed the Dalamatia plans for teaching that worked as an industrial school where the pupils learned hands on. This plan of education did not ignore the importance of mental training and the development of character. Among the later students trained in Mesopotamia for work with respective of races were the Andonites from the highlands of western India, and the Redman and Blue man represented as well.

Hap, head of the college of revealed religion, Proclaim a moral law to the early races. This law was known as "The Father's Way" and contained the following commands:

1. You should fear nor serve any God but the Father of all.
2. You shall not disobey the Father's Son the world's ruler nor show disrespect to his superhuman associates.
3. You should not tell a lie when called before the judges of the people.
4. You shall not kill men, women, or children.
5. You shall not steal your neighbor's goods or cattle.
6. You shall not touch your friend's wife.
7. You shall not show disrespect to your parents or elders of the tribe.

These laws of Dalamatia lasted for thousands of years, much longer than the Ten Commandments with which we in the Western world are familiar. When I began to examine these laws, they reminded me of the Ten Commandments of Moses. Ironically, The Urantia Book states that many of the stones those laws inscribed upon are now beneath the water on the shores of Mesopotamia and Persia. It was a custom in those days to hold one of the commandments in mind, one for each day of the week, as a salutation and to recite at mealtime.

The measurement of their day was the lunar month, a period of 28 days. Those super-teachers introduced the seven-day week, and it grew out of the fact that seven was one-fourth of 28.

In the country around the city of Dalamatia in an area around 100 miles, there were hundreds of graduates of the prince's school. They were engaged in the herding of animals, and they carried out instructions they received from the prince's staff and other human helpers. Some were even keepers of the land.

was not sentenced to toil the land because of some curse: "In the sweat of your brow shall you eat the fruit of the fields." (Genesis 3:19) Cultivation of the soil is inherent in establishing an advancing civilization in an evolutionary world. In fact, agriculture was one of the fundamental teachings of the prince's staff. Dalamatia had a residence of almost 6,000 at the time of the rebellion. This number included students, but the visitors always numbered over 1,000. Melchizedek, who presented this paper, said one would be amazed at the fantastic progress made over thousands of years. But almost all were lost during the horrible confusion of the coming spiritual darkness that followed the Caligastia catastrophe of deception and sedation. Melchizedek refers to the character of Caligastia and Lucifer, and what they believe contributed to their fall.

Misfortunes of Caligastia

In looking back over the long career of Caligastia, we find only one outstanding feature of his conduct that might challenge attention; he was ultra-individualistic. He was inclined to take sides with almost every party of protest, and he was usually sympathetic with those who gave mild expression to implied criticism. We detect the early appearance of this to be restless under authority, to mildly resent all forms of supervision. While slightly resentful of senior counsel and somewhat restive under superior authority, nonetheless, whenever a test had come, he had always proved loyal to the universe rulers and obedient to the mandates of the constellation Fathers. No real fault was ever found in him up to the time of his shameful betrayal of Urantia.

It should be noted that both Lucifer and Caligastia had been patiently instructed and lovingly warned respecting their critical tendencies and subtle development of their pride of self and its associated exaggeration of the feeling of self-importance. But all of these attempts to help had been misconstrued as unwarranted criticism and as unjustified interference with personal liberties. Both Caligastia and Lucifer judged their friendly advisers as being actuated by the very reprehensible motives which were beginning to dominate their own distorted thinking and misguided planning. They judged their unselfish advisers by their own evolving selfishness. ⁸

For thousands of years, the Caligastia 100 progressed at an average pace. We must bear in mind that those 100 had the Tree of Life to sustain them and to live for long periods. I recall writers that I have researched such as William Bramley, (The Gods of Eden,) Erich Von Daniken (Chariots of the Gods), and Jim, Marrs (Ruled by Secrecy). And also, two very important writers Christian and Barbara O'Brien, who wrote Genius of the Few. They wrote in detail about the people of the Garden of Eden. All these writers mentioned in their writings the unusual longevity of life of those they called extraterrestrials.

The information some of those writers claim to have received from Sumerian cuneiforms of many years ago are bits and pieces of the story of Adam and Eve that were passed down to us from antiquity, and perhaps the Caligastia 100 that those Higher Beings write about in The Urantia Book. I sometimes wonder if the Tree of Life was the original origin of the concept of Ponce de Leon's, Fountain of Youth. A fountain, if one bathed in it, would obtain perpetual youth. I am pretty sure that the legend of people living for hundreds of years originated from the time of Adam, Eve, and the Tree of Life, and perhaps as far back in time as that of prince Caligastia's staff. As I continue to quote from The Urantia Book presented to our planet by a higher authority:

The Prince of Urantia went into darkness at the time of the Lucifer rebellion, thus precipitating the long confusion of the planet. He was subsequently deprived of sovereign authority by the co-ordinate action of the constellation rulers and on the universe authorities. He shares the inevitable vicissitudes of isolated Urantia down to the time of Adam's sojourn on the planet and contributed something to the miscarriage of the plans to uplift the mortal races through the infusion of the lifeblood of the new Violet race the descendants of Adam and Eve.

The power of the fallen Prince to disturb human affairs was enormously curtailed by the mortal incarnation of Machiventa Melchizedek in the days of Abraham; and subsequently, during the life of Michael (Jesus) in the flesh, this traitorous Prince was finally shorn of all authority on Urantia.

The doctrine of a personal devil on Urantia, though it had some foundation in the planetary presence of the traitorous and iniquitous, Caligastia, was nevertheless wholly fictitious in its teaching that such a "devil" could influence the normal mind against its free and natural choosing. Even before Michael's bestowal on Urantia, neither Caligastia nor Daligastia was ever able to oppress mortal or coerce any normal individual into doing anything against the human will. The free will of man is supreme in moral affairs; even the indwelling Thought Adjuster refuses to think a single thought or to perform a single act against the choosing of man's own will.

And this rebel of the realm, shorn of all power to harm his former subjects, awaits the final adjudication by the Uversa (headquarters of higher worlds) Ancient of Days, of all who participated in the Lucifer rebellion. ⁹

As you can see, the rebellion of Lucifer and Caligastia, the once prince of this world had a tremendously adverse effect on our planet; and there is very little information in the Bible, or any place else, about the rebellion and this prince. Jesus mentioned in John 12:31: "The prince of this world is judged." The chaos and distortion the uprising caused are unbelievable; do you think this lack of information is a coincidence? And today we are fighting their descendants. There must have been some kind of ingredients in The Tree of Life that helped the sons of God to live on Earth indefinitely, after thousands of years The Tree of Life was taken from the first sinners on Earth. Those celestial sons of God must have had some kind of withdrawal effect, and that no doubt affected their descendants the men of renown in Genesis 6:4, and today their descendants (the ones who think they are better than everyone else, they must still think they are descendants of gods) who are mostly adrenochrome drinkers and psychopaths, who want to rule the world, they had the habit for thousands of years.

John the Revelator warned us in Revelation 12:12, stating: "Therefore rejoice ye heavens and ye that dwell in them. Woe! To the inhibitors of the earth and the sea. For the devil is come down unto you having great wrath because he knoweth he has but a short time." He warned us, and we took it all in as myths, and look at what we have today.

Chapter 3

The Planetary Rebellion

For thousands of years, Caligastia had overseen our planet earth when Satan, Lucifer's assistant, made his usual inspection calls. "Yes," according to The Urantia Book, Satan is a real being, (without the long tail and horns) one of the higher Sons of God, a person of great brilliance. During his inspection, Satan informed Caligastia of Lucifer's proposed plans for a "Declaration of Liberty." The Prince agreed to go along with the plans to betray our planet earth. The loyal universe personalities looked upon Prince Caligastia with contempt because of his planned betrayal of trust.

Lucifer Manifesto

The Urantia Book, states that Lucifer was a magnificent being, a brilliant personality that reigned "Upon the holy mountain of God." He was chief executive of a vast system of 1,000 inhabited worlds. He stood next to the Highest Fathers of the constellation, in direct line of the local universe authority. Self-contemplation is most dangerous, even to the exalted personalities of the celestial worlds. It states in The Urantia Book, paper 53, section 1, paragraph 3 concerning Lucifer; Your heart was lifted because of your beauty: you corrupted your wisdom because of your brightness. It appears Lucifer fell in love with himself.

Here, I'm attempting to give a basic outline of the reason for Lucifer's rebellion. Lucifer had a problem with the reality of the Universal Father, and he denied that the personality is a gift of the Universal Father. He even claimed those that are called finaliters (they are the ones from a planet like ours that evolved for millions of years reached paradise, saw the Father and returned as Super Higher Beings) were in cohorts with Michael and the other Higher Beings. He believed that the local universe should be autonomous, so he protested the right of Michael, Jesus the Creator Son to assume sovereignty of the local worlds in the name of a hypothetical paradise Father. He admitted that Michael was the Creator Son of the local universe, but not a God and rightful ruler. Lucifer denounced those beings higher than himself in authority as foreigners and tyrants for interfering in the domestic universe affairs. The ones that he bitterly attacked were the Ancients of Days; it seems those beings had great powers. Lucifer contended immortality was inherent in the system personalities, that the resurrection was natural and automatic and that all creatures should live eternally, except for the arbitrary and unjust act of the executioners of the Ancients of Days. From what I have gathered, it appears the Ancients of Days have the final say as to whether a being goes to the second death where they exist no more: "He that hath an ear let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the church; he that overcometh shall not be hurt of the second death." (Revelation 2:11). There are quite a few accusations in the Manifesto of Lucifer; it will be good for the readers to read it themselves, starting with paper 53, section 3 The Urantia Book.

We are not the only creatures that are evolving and must reach an understanding of God through experience, faith, and knowledge. It looks as though every being on his level has his problems. These higher Sons of God descend to help us; that is how they evolve, only they are in another dimension. An example of Jesus known in the higher worlds as a Creator Son, and before he becomes sovereign of his universe, he had to experience seven initiations. When he came into our world that was his 7th and final initiation. The Bible mentioned in (Matthew 28:18): "And Jesus came and spake unto them saying, all power is unto me in heaven and in the earth." He had completed his mission and became sovereign of his universe, which is also our universe. In (John 18:36) he said: "My kingdom is not of this world." His kingdom is our local universe. Those Higher Being also evolve, and through faith and experience, they must conclude there is a God.

The same Melchizedek that sponsors the previous paper is the author of this paper. He writes, of all the administrative work in a local universe, no trust is considered more important or sacred than a planetary Prince who assumes responsibility for the well-being and guidance of evolving mortals of a newly inhabited world. The Higher Beings write that of all types of evil; none is more personally destructive than the betrayal of one's friends confiding in you. Caligastia's deliberate sin completely twisted his personality; his mind was never able to regain its balance fully.

Not long after Satan's inspection and when the planetary administrators were preparing for great things for our planet earth in the middle of winter of that northern continent, Caligastia held a prolonged conference with his associate Daligastia, after which Daligastia called the ten councils of Urantia in session, the Caligastia 100. This "Powwow" opens with the statement that Prince Caligastia planned to announce himself absolute sovereign of earth and order all administrative groups to relinquish all responsibility into the hands of Daligastia as manager, pending the reorganization of planetary government and the redistribution of those offices.

This shocking demand followed by a superb appeal by Van, Chairmen of the Supreme Council of Coordination. Van and his able jurist announced the proposed course of Caligastia as an act bordering on planetary rebellion and asked his conferee to abstain from all participation until an appeal could be taken to Lucifer, the system sovereign of Satania; Van won the support of his entire staff. The request is taken to Jerusem (headquarters world of Satania, our local system), but Van was not aware that Lucifer was the ringleader of the rebellion. When orders returned designating Caligastia as supreme sovereign of Urantia and commanding total obedience to his mandates, Van was flabbergasted. It was in reply to this confounding message that Van made his memorable address seven hours in length in which he formally accused Daligastia, Caligastia, and Lucifer of standing in contempt of the sovereignty of the universe of Nebadon. And he appealed to the Most High of Edentia (the headquarters of the world of the constellation to which our system belongs) for support and confirmation.

Before the rebellion, those Higher Beings wrote as mentioned there was a system in place where the Caligastia 100 were in constant communication with the higher worlds, a system which made the speed of light look as though it was standing still; that's how fast it was. After the rebellion, all communication with the higher world was severed; our planet isolated, utterly cut off from outside counsel and advice. Those beings were cast down to earth, as mentioned in the Bible, Revelation 12:12, but in a different dimension than ours.

Daligastia, the assistant to Caligastia, formally proclaimed Caligastia Lord of the earth supreme over all. With this announcement before them, the issues were apparent, and each group went off to themselves to begin the discussion, which would eventually determine the destiny of every superhuman personality who found himself stranded on our planet. Remember, they were not in the same dimension as we are.

Seraphim and cherubim (higher forms of angels), and other celestial beings who were involved had to decide upon the long evil struggle, the protracted sinful conflict. Many super beings that happened to be on earth in that other dimension at the time of the rebellion were trapped. The Seraphim and their associates were forced to choose between sin and righteousness—between the way of Lucifer and the will of the unseen Father. See Revelation 12:4 one-third of the stars cast down to the earth (angels that fell).

For seven years, this struggle prevailed. It was not until every person who was involved made a final decision that the higher authorities of Edentia intervened. Van and his loyal associates receive justification and release from their prolonged anxiety and unbearable suspense.

The Seven Crucial Years

The Melchizedek council broadcasted the outbreak of the rebellion on Jerusem, the capital of Satania. Emergency Melchizedeks was sent right away to Jerusem. Gabriel volunteered to act as a representative of the Creator Son Michael (Jesus) whose authority was challenged. When the facts of the rebellion of our local universe broadcast on Satania, our local system was isolated, quarantined from her sister systems, the other worlds.

On our planet, 40 members of the Caligastia 100 refused to join the rebellion, including Van. Some of the staff's human assistants were also brave defenders of Michael's universal government. But there were too many losses among what we would call higher angels, seraphim, and cherubim. The Prince organized groups of rebel personalities to do his bidding. Van organized the faithful groups, and then began the great battle for the salvation of the planetary staff and other marooned celestial personalities.

During the time of this struggle, the faithful ones dwelled in an unwallled, poorly protected settlement a few miles east of Dalamatia. But their dwellings were protected day and night by personalities unseen by human eyes, and the faithful ones had possession of the priceless Tree of Life. Several of the cherubim and seraphim with the aid of other unseen personalities had taken possession and assumed custody of the Tree of Life; they permitted only the 40 loyalists of the staff and their associated modified mortals to partake of the fruit and leaves of that energy plant.

All throughout the seven critical years of Caligastia's rebellion, Van put all efforts into ministering to his loyal men, women, and angels. Those Higher Beings wrote the reason Van was able to maintain such unshakable loyalty was because of the product of clear thinking, wise reasoning, logical judgment, sincere motivation, unselfish purpose, intelligent loyalty, experiential memory, disciplined character, and unquestioning dedication of his personality to the doing of the will of the Father in Paradise.

The Caligastia One Hundred after the Rebellion

When the final roll was called, the corporeal members of the prince's staff were found to have aligned themselves as follows: Van and his entire court of co-ordination had remained loyal. Ang and three members of the food council had survived. The board of animal husbandry was all swept into rebellion, as were all of the animal-conquest advisers. Fad and five members of educational faculty were saved. Nod and all the commission on industry and trade joined Caligastia. Hap and the entire college of revealed religion remained loyal with Van and his noble band. Lut and the whole board of health were lost. The council of art and science remained loyal in its entirety, but Tut and the commission on tribal

government all went astray. Thus were forty out of one hundred saved, later to be transferred to Jerusem, where they resumed their Paradise journey. '

The 60 members of the Caligastia 100 that rebelled chose Nod as their leader. The 60 members worked hard for the rebel Prince, but they soon found out they no longer had the use of the sustenance of the system of life circuits. It seems with this life circuit that comes from higher worlds and the substances that come from the Tree of Life; they could live on earth for an indefinite amount of time. They had awakened to the fact that they were degraded to the status of mortals. Although they were superhuman beings, their lifespan was now limited; so, to increase their numbers, Daligastia ordered immediate engagement in sexual reproduction, knowing full well that the 60 rebels and the 44 modified Andonites associates were doomed to extinction by death.

When the sons of God (the Anunnaki of the Sumerians) of Genesis 6:4, was ordered by the head of the rebel group to start having children, they began having children among themselves, and those children became giants or Nephilim, there were men and women among those sons of God. See The Urantia Book paper 50, section 3, paragraph 5. Genesis 6:4, said after that they start having children by the daughters of men. That sentence goes on to say those children became men of renown. They eventually became the Aryan and the Sumerian people very advanced people. The Giants became a massive problem in that part of the earth; it is said they had a problem getting food, and started eating humans, see the Bible, Numbers 13: 30-33, also Deuteronomy 2:10-11. In the Bible in ancient times, men and women was called sons of God, there was no distinction Hebrew 12:6-7.

After the fall, Nod and the disloyal staff migrated to the north and east. Their descendants were known as the Nodites, and the place they dwelled was well-known as "The Land of Nod." It is amazing how the story came down to us from thousands of years ago. The History Channel has reminded us that Higher Beings had children by humans. Season 6, volume 1, disc 2, "The Star Children" of The History Channel's "Ancient Aliens," mentioned a geneticist, David Wright of Harvard Medical School, discovered genes in humans dating back 400 thousand years ago that contain an unknown ancestor. The Urantia Book identified them long ago.

There was chaos in and around Dalamatia for almost 50 years after the rebellion. The Higher Beings write that a complete reorganization of the world was attempted; revolution took the place of evolution. Although the superior and partially trained in and around Dalamatia appeared to have made sudden advancement when these new and radical methods were attempted on the outlying people, they opened Pandora's Box: the confusion was indescribable and racial pandemonium was the result. When we study the real story of humans, we can see right after Lucifer's rebellion there was much chaos, even thousands of years later. Our ancient ancestors were taught knowledge for which they were not ready, the knowledge that was to advance for them and caused all kind of distortion. This was the result of the rebels trying to take over.

Right after the rebellion, the entire rebel staff was engaged in a fanatical defense of the city against the hordes of Simi savages who attacked its walls because of the doctrine of liberty, prematurely taught to them. Consequently, Caligastia's plans for the reconstruction of human society by his ideas of individual freedom and group liberties were a complete failure. Society quickly resumed its old biologic level, and the forward struggle had to start all over again.

About 150 years after the rebellion, Dalamatia sank beneath the sea, and this land did not emerge until almost every vestige of the once noble culture was obliterated. Van and his followers had fled early to the highland west of India, where they were exempted from attacks by the confused races of the lowland. From this place, Van and his associates planned the rehabilitation of humanity.

During the seven years before help arrived, Van placed the administration of human affairs into the hands of 10 commissions, four to each group. The senior resident Life Carriers on our planet, but in another dimension, took temporary leadership of the 40; they functioned throughout the seven years of waiting. Groups of Amadonites accepted those responsibilities when the 39 loyal staff members returned to Jerusem.

The Amadonites were taken from the 144 loyal Andonites, which Amadon belonged, and the group who became known by this name. It states in The Urantia Book that 39 of this group were men, and 105 were women. Fifty-six of this number were of immortality status, and all (except Amadon) went to Jerusem with members who were once Caligastia staff. Amadon was Van right-hand man. Van's special team who took the place of the loyal staff sent to Jerusem, continued on earth until their mortal days expired. They were the biologic advantage, which multiplied and continued to supply leadership for the world throughout the long Dark Age of the post-rebellion era.

After seven years, Van's call for help and directions was finally answered. To us humans, seven years seems an unreasonably long time to wait for one's call for help to be answered. But according to The Urantia Book, those Higher Beings are very respectful of everyone's free will, when the Most High Father of the constellation Norlatiadek (the constellation which our world belongs) was sure that every person of our universal system had decided as to whom they would side with Lucifer or the Creator Son Michael. Only then would the Most High Father send forth the mandate that the Melchizedek Sons of God, with many associates sent to our planet earth. To name a few of those who were sent, there was one of the fallen Prince's former aides, when he was in the higher worlds that remained faithful to Michael: two resident Life Carriers; and a Trinitized Son (a son that came forth from the Trinity). If one read The Urantia Book, they will soon learn that some of those Higher Beings brought forth offspring of their own in a way that we humans could not comprehend.

There were 12 Melchizedeks sent to our planet from the higher world's seven years into the rebellion. In The Urantia Book, they are called the Twelve Melchizedek Receivers. It is said that they preserved what civilization our ancestors had achieved at that time on our planet; their policies were faithfully carried out by Van. Around 1,000 years after the rebellion, Van had more than 350 advanced groups scattered throughout the world that helped spread civilization; they consisted mainly of mixed descendants of the loyal Andonites, Singik race and members of the Nodites that took side with Van. The leader of the rebel group was called Nod; he was once head of the commission industry and trade, that group after many years were called Nodites after thousands of years the land they occupied was will know as the Land of Nod.

Even with the setback of the rebellion, there were good strains of biologic promise on earth. Due to the supervision of the Melchizedek Receivers, Van and Amadon continued the work of fostering the natural evolution of humans. They helped to forward the physical evolution of the human species until it reached the point of its culminating attainment. And so the dispatching of material Son and Daughter of God (Adam and Eve) was sent from higher worlds to our planet Urantia.

Van stayed on earth until the time Adam and Eve incarnated on our planet. He remained as head of all superhuman personalities operating on our planet earth. I know this statement in The Urantia Book will turn heads due to our human limitations, but those Higher Beings write that

Van and Amadon were sustained on our planet by the technique of the Tree of Life, along with specialized life ministry of the Melchizedek for over 150,000 years. I, for one, do not find this surprising as we do not know what those Higher Beings were capable of doing; after all, they did bring forth God's universe and according to God's plans.

Again, Van and Amadon stayed on our planet until shortly after the arrival of Adam and Eve. Some years later, they were taken to Jerusem. I sincerely believe there is something to these stories. As I mentioned before, I've read several books on beings from other worlds visiting our world thousands of years ago, and who were able to live on our planet for thousands of years. It appears that those Higher Beings did give us information in the past and, as usual, the information was greatly distorted throughout the years. Just as they are giving us information today in The Urantia Book, very few are paying attention.

With all the knowledge we have available today, we shouldn't have a problem analyzing the fall of Lucifer and reaching the conclusion that there are higher worlds. And residents of those higher worlds are capable of sinning just as we are, but their sins are on a different level than ours. I believe the sins of those in higher worlds affect a greater part of the universe than ours. Our sins only affect our earth. But I would imagine that as we evolve in the future, our sins will have a greater effect on our universe.

There are quite a few Higher Beings mentioned in The Urantia Book I did not mention because it would make my book huge; the reader will have to deal with them when they read The Urantia Book. But there is one group I cannot avoid mentioning they are known in The Urantia Book as midwayers. They are midway between mankind and angels. The midwayers reside on our planet, but in another dimension and, normally, we can't see them.

While watching the episodes of The History Channel's "Ancient Aliens," they mentioned those ancient aliens appeared to have been warring among themselves. You can read about this battle in India's Mahabharata Literature. I'm reminded of the midwayers The Urantia Book writes about. At the time of Lucifer's rebellion, there were 50,000 of them on our planet's inner dimension—40,119 rebelled along with Lucifer. Those rebels are the ones who caused chaos on our planet before the coming of the Christ and Pentecost. At that time The Urantia Book mentioned they were imprisoned on a special planet in a higher dimension. In the Bible, Matthew 12:24, the leader of the secondary rebel group was known as Beelzebub, prince of the devil.

The rebel midwayers are the missing link to The History Channel's "Ancient Aliens". It is my sincere opinion that some of the midwayers can come and go, in and out of our dimension at will through some type of portal or wormhole. I have noticed while reading several books about people having experienced near-death experiences, all of them mentioned going through a tunnel (see Proof of Heaven by Eben Alexander M.D). The 9,881 midwayers that remained loyal to the higher world were of great help to Van and mankind. They and other beings were the ones that fought against the rebel midwayers.

The Struggle for Civilization

Right after the paper on the rebellion of Lucifer, paper 68, those Higher Beings write of "The Dawn of Civilization," the long struggle forward of the human species from a state of being little better off than animal existence. Those Super Beings say that civilization is a racial acquirement; it is not biologically inherent; therefore, all children should be reared in an environment of culture, and that succeeding generations of youth must

receive their education. The superior qualities of civilization, such as science, religion and so forth, are not transmitted from one generation to the next by inheritance. The Dalamatia teachers were the ones whose teachings started the social evolution of a cooperative order, which had a great effect on our ancient ancestors. Those teachers nurtured humanity for thousands of years. It wasn't easy for a primitive man to learn that there is strength in numbers. A man alone did not stand a chance unless he bore a tribal mark that if any assault made upon him, would be revenge. As mentioned in Genesis 4:15, "And the Lord set a mark upon Cain, lest any finding him should kill him."

Those tribes that were willing to reorganize themselves into primitive societies were more successful in their dealings with nature and with their fellow man their possibilities of survival were greater. Cooperation is not a typical trait of humanity. Humanity learned first to co-operate out of fear; slowly, they discovered that it is beneficial to work together, and then they realized that they would be more successful in conquering their environment by working together.

It seems to me that two of the most important things that helped humanity to become thinkers were hunger and fear. In their hunger, as food grew scarce, the man had to resort to improved methods of gleaning food to prevent starvation. We also must consider the stage that humanity became meat eaters as it had a significant influence on the development of the brain. As for fear, the man had to continually think of new ways to protect himself and his family. And although it played a tremendous role in the development of the human mind to become thinkers fear is now one of humanity's greatest enemies; it destroys the soul.

In short, the civilization of humanity was a long process that required thousands of years. Sometimes, I wonder how many of us take the time to sit and think of what our ancestors had to experience for us, their progeny, to reach this point in our evolution. The days of our ancient ancestors were full of uncertainty with predators hounding them wherever they wandered. The humans of ancient times had a stupendous fear of the darkness of night. I can only imagine how throughout the night, images of creeping things faded in and out of their consciousness as they tried desperately to sleep at night.

Factors in Social Progression

Civilization may appear to be an inconsistent goal of striving and struggling, but there is overwhelming evidence of purposeful striving, not old dead stagnation. If we took the time and analyzed life with care, we would eventually see purpose emerging: the whole social body pushing toward destiny. But it does not appear to be pre-destiny, but more of a choice of destinies.

It's documented in quantum physics that Newton physics does not apply to minute particles, such as photon (a small particle that light is made up of). In Newton physics, we can know the position and momentum of an airplane flying at 200 miles per hour in an eastern direction; if it stayed on course, in two hours, we could track its precise location. But in quantum physics, it is impossible to know the position and speed of those small particles at the same time. Any measurement of those tiny particles is only a probability; in physics, this is called the Werner Heisenberg Uncertainty Principle. Today, we have social biologists, as well as psychologists, applying this principle to humanity. They are saying that it is impossible for any prophet to predict the future and that their prediction can only be a probability. For a person that is headed down a destructive course, any little shift could change the entire outcome of that person's life. Our path in life at any given time is a probability; we have free will so that we can change at any time. A shift in one's thoughts can alter that life. If all of humanity headed in the wrong direction, it's up to humanity

to change direction. So, the prophecies of the prophets are only a probability that can change. If we are not willing to change, well, that is another story.

For our ancient ancestors, it took thousands upon thousands of years before there was any noticeable change in their daily routine. They did not have the mind power to think of new procedures; instead, they reacted to instincts. But the herd instincts in our far-off ancestors are not sufficient to account for the development of a human civilization as we have witnessed on earth today. That is why the Higher Beings sent to earth, such as the sons of God of Genesis 6:4. They came to civilize humanity Hunter-gatherers after the seed of humanity mutated through the animal kingdom for million of years they were ready to be civilized.

The history of our ancient ancestors is but a record of humanity's long food struggle. Primitive man only thought, when he was hungry; hunger, vanity, ghost fear and sex were the ingredients that eventually forced our ancient ancestors to become civilized gradually. Food saving was his first self-denial and first thought of self-discipline. Primitive desires helped to bring forth civilization, but ghost fear helped keep it together.

Ghost fear had a terrific amount of socializing influence on primitive humans; the normal fear was physiological, fear of physical pain, or that of hunger that constantly gnawed away at the abdomen, or some earthly mishap. But ghost fear was a new and sublime kind of terror.

Most dreams were horrifying for the primitive mind. Ghost dreams terrorized early humans driving these superstitious dreamers close to each other for comfort against the unseen, imaginary danger of the spirit world. The ghost dreams were the most rapid appearing difference between the animal's mind and the human's mind. Animals did not dream or visualize life after death. Other than the factor of ghost fear, all society built on the fundamental needs of the tribes and their basic urges. The fear of the ghost brought a new and fantastic kind of fear, a doubt that reached out and away from the individual's needs. The dread of the departed spirit brought on a new and agonizing type of concern. This horrifying and powerful terror helped to mold the free social order of ancient times into a more disciplined and better controlled primitive group.

Although fear was dreadful, it helped to shape the minds of primitive humanity and the ridiculous superstitions, some of which lingers on still today. This superstitious fear of the unreal and supernatural later led to the "Fear of the Lord which is the beginning of wisdom." This fear of the Lord eventually grew into awesome wonder and respect. The early perception of ghost fear became the catalyst for a robust social bond; since that period, humanity has been striving for the attainment of spirituality.

All our modern institutions spring from the evolution of primitive customs of our ancient ancestors. Almost anything we can think that is in use today has evolved from some gadget of our ancient ancestors. Even the jet planes that take us from one continent to other stems from old humanity's desire to fly like birds.

The mores and customs originated to adjust group living and mass existence. The mores were humanity's first social institution. All these common reactions grew out of the effort to avoid pain, and at the same time enjoy pleasure as well as power.

Ghost fear pushed primitive humans to visualize and dream of the supernatural, which laid the foundation for those mighty, social, influential mores, religions and customs that passed from generation to generation. For example, one thing in the early years that helped to establish and crystallize the mores and custom of our ancient ancestors was the belief that the dead were jealous of the way they had lived and died and would bring punishment upon those mortals who broke the rules which they honored while in the flesh. Those Higher Beings bring out

that all of this is illustrated today by the reverence the yellow race has for their ancestors. Later, evolving primitive religions were reinforced by ghost fear to stabilize the mores and customs; nevertheless, advancing civilizations have done a great deal in liberating humankind from the fetters of fear and slavery of superstitions.

Before the arrival of the Dalamatia teachers, primitive humans were helpless victims to the mores, customs, rituals, and endless ceremonies from the time of their awakening in the morning until they fell asleep in their caves at night; things had to be done just so, according to the ways of the tribes. Our long-ago ancestors went through many phases of trials and tribulations.

Those Higher Beings make the statement that land is the stage of society, and humans are the actors and actresses, who must perform and conform according to the land situation. There were four steps in the forward march of civilization:

1. **The collection stage.** Hunger led to the first industry organizing. Primitive humans had food gleaning lines that were several miles long gathering food from fruit trees, nuts, and roots as they passed. It was the primitive's nomadic stage of culture and is still a way of life for some Bushman tribes in Africa and native Australia.

2. **The hunting stage.** The invention of tools and weapons helped ancient man to become hunters, which gave him considerable freedom from the slavery of food. A thoughtful Andonite, after bruising his fist during combat, rediscovered the idea of using a long stick as his arm and he connected a piece of flint in place of his fist. It was the beginning of the use of valuable weapons. Many tribes made their discovery this way, making various hammers that represented the great forward steps in human civilization. Today, some native Australians or African have progressed little beyond this stage, and it may be difficult for some of us to comprehend how some African tribes or native Australian tribes can lag so far behind in their progress of civilization. But if we take a close look around us at some of the so-called civilized humans, we can readily observe how some people grasp hold of traditions and religious practices of their immediate ancestors and won't let go, no matter what, even though they know that their method is significantly flawed. They continue in this trend generation after generation. They felt comfortable where they were and feared to leave their familiar zone.

3. **The pastoral stage.** The domestication of animals made this age possible. The Arabs and native Africans were among the more recently rural peoples. Rustic living further relieved primitive man from food slavery. Before the pastoral stage, society was one of sex cooperation, but the spread of animal domestication reduced women to the depths of social slavery. In pre-pastoral times, it was man's duty to provide the meat and woman's duty to gather vegetables. When the man entered the pastoral age, woman's dignity fell considerably. She was still responsible for delivering the vegetable necessities of life. The man only needed to go to his herd to produce an abundance of animal meat; man became somewhat independent of woman. By the end of this period, the woman was not much more than a slave in her environment; she was expected to labor and bear offspring just as the animals in man's herd. The man of that age had a great love for his herd it's a pity that he did not love his wife as much.

4. **The agricultural stage.** And was the era of the domestication of plants and represented the highest goal of material civilization. The Prince Caligastia and his staff put great emphasis on agriculture and horticulture. Adam and Eve, who came many years after the prince, were

gardeners, not shepherds. Gardening was an advanced culture in those days, and Adam and Eve did not eat meat. The growing of crops gave a little dignity to all races of humanity. During this period, man tended to the herds and woman tilled the soil.

The evolving of human society from the hunting stage through that of the herder, to that of the tiller of the soil or agriculture stage, each step of this progressive civilization became less and less nomadism; and more and more men began to live at home. Today, the industry has supplemented agriculture, but industry cannot hope to survive if its leaders fail to recognize that the highest evolution must rest upon a sound agricultural foundation.

Evolution of Culture

Humanity is a creature of the soil, a child of nature; it matters not how desperately he tries to escape the land; in the end, he will fail. From dust you are, and to earth you shall return. It is true of all humanity. The Urantia Book.

Those Higher Beings make the statement that the fundamental struggle of man is for land, and always will be for land. The first social organizations of primitive humans were mainly the result of the winning of land. As man's intelligence increased by using science and the arts, the land yield increased, as well as the natural population of offspring brought under control, which provided leisure for the development of civilization. During the time of plentiful land, a man's life was valuable, and loss of life was horrible. During the time land was scarce in conjunction with overpopulation, a man's life wasn't worth much; when there was war, famine, and pestilence, life was regarded with less concern.

For many years, it was the practice of an unmarried woman to kill her offspring. Among the more civilized groups, the illegitimate child became the ward of the girl's mother. Many primitive tribes were almost exterminated because of the practice of abortion and infanticide. But regardless of laws dictated, very few children were destroyed after having been nurtured as maternal affection was too strong, The Urantia Book paper 68, section 6, paragraph 9.

Between this paper, 68, the dawn of civilization and document 73, where the story of Adam and Eve begin, those Higher Beings write about subject concerning the evolution of governments of our ancient ancestors, state government and so forth. Which I don't think would be feasible for us to explore right now, since most of us learned how the government operates in schools or through life experiences.

Between the period of the rebellion and the coming of Adam and Eve, it was around 150,000 years. Van and his staff directed humanity until the arrival of Adam and Eve and their staff as mentioned earlier. The cultural deterioration and spiritual deficiency, resulting from the Caligastia and Lucifer's downfall and the resulting confusion, had little effect on the biologic condition of the people on earth. Organic evolution continued despite the culture and moral setback, which quickly followed the rebellion of Caligastia and Daligastia.

Many years after the rebellion almost 40 thousand years ago, the Life Carriers on duty on earth concluded that humankind had reached its biological apex. The Melchizedek Receivers, having reached the same conclusion, agreed to join the Life Carriers in partitioning the Most Highs of Edentia, asking that they send an inspector to earth to authorize the dispatching of biological up-lifters, Material Son, and Daughter of God.

Tabamantia, the sovereign supervisor of a series of worlds, was sent to inspect our world, and after his inspection of racial progress, he recommended that our earth is granted, Material Son and Daughter. In less than 100 years from the time of the inspection, Adam and Eve, Material

Son, and Daughter of our local system, arrived and began the formidable task of bringing order to a confused world retarded by rebellion and isolation from the higher spiritual realms.

When an evolutionary world like our planet reaches its biological limits that is a clue for those Life Carriers stationed on our earth but in another dimension to request from their superior's biological up-lifters. In other words, Adam and Eve's purpose for coming to our planet, where a beautiful Garden had been prepared for them, was to multiply and have up to a million offspring daughters, sons, grandchildren, and great-grandchildren. It is, no doubt, where the legend "be fruitful and multiply" originated; Adam, Eve and their progeny were a new race of people.

After these children had increased to the desired number, they were to leave the Garden environment and mingle with the surrounding tribes that had been prepared for that purpose and interbreed with them. The interbreeding of this superior race of people was to act as a chain reaction and eventually blend with the entire world. That's the reason Adam and Eve were given the title "biological up-lifters." From the story of Adam and Eve coming as biological up-lifters after thousands of years, we inherited the tale in the Sumerians epic of Gilgamesh and the Anunnaki creating man as slave workers to mine gold. In a couple of chapters, we'll get into the story of Higher Beings creating bodies for Adam and Eve. We can only imagine how many times the story of Adam and Eve has changed over a period of 37,000 years. Now with The Urantia Book, we know this change took place.

Usually, on a healthy planet, the coming of a Material Son and Daughter (Adam and Eve) is like announcing the arrival of a great age of invention, material progress, and intellectual enlightenment. In other words, the appearance of Adam and Eve in most worlds is considered a tremendous scientific age, but not on earth. Although on our planet people were physically fit, the tribes lingered in savagery and moral degeneration. Around 10,000 years after the rebellion, practically all the gains of the Caligastia 100 had been eradicated.

The Nodites were the offspring of the rebellious members of the prince's staff, their name coming from their leader, Nod. He was once the chairperson of the Dalamatia commission on industry and trade. The Amadonites were the descendants of those Andonites who chose to remain loyal with Van. Amadon followers who were faithful to Van called "Amadonite," is a culture and religious term rather than a race term; racially, the Amadonites were Andonites.

The Nodites and Amadonites were the most advanced culture and races of people on earth. Before the arrival of Adam and Eve, there was a tradition of animosity between the Nodites and Amadonites. Whenever they tried to engage in any joint enterprise, a feud would surface. Even later in the Garden of Eden, their endeavors would fail, and it was exceedingly difficult for them to work in peace. The Amadonites felt the Nodites were the fallen race because of Nod, their former leader's rebellion.

Right after the destruction of the prince's headquarters at Dalamatia, the followers of Nod had separated into three different groups. I think this was after they scattered when they attempted to build the Tower of Gabel see Genesis 11-8. The central group remained near their origin, near the headwaters of the Persian Gulf. The eastern group migrated to the highland regions of Eden just east of the Euphrates Valley. The western group located on the northeastern Syrian shores of the Mediterranean Sea and adjoining territory. This is not too far from the Garden of Eden thousands of years later.

The Nodites freely mated with the Sangik race and had left behind able progeny. Some of the descendants of the Nodites rebel group joined Van and his loyal followers in the lands north of Mesopotamia, near Lake Van and the southern Caspian Sea region. Those Nodites that mingled and mixed with the Amadonites numbered among the “mighty men of old.”

Caligastia and his followers caused considerable confusion on earth at that time because things didn't work out the way they had planned. They had rebelled against God's plans, which caused humanity of that time to be in chaos. Furthermore, the humans of that period were not evolved enough in their minds to work out the problems caused by the rebellion; most of the time, they were in absolute resistance, and their fear drove them to do unbelievable acts. At this time those so-called fallen sons of God the first sinners on Earth could control a weak human mind. And they did all kinds of actions, trying to force our ancient ancestors to do things their way. Believe it or not, they are still trying to control people today, only in different ways. But since the coming of Jesus Christ and the Holy Spirit, they can no longer control a human mind unless the humans are willing and allow it. And today we are having all kinds of trouble with their descendants who want to rule the Earth.

I believe the offspring of Adam and Eve was in contact with the midwayers who were loyal and were able to get them to take them from one continent to another in their UFOs, and they probably went back after so many years to pick them up. After examining all the events occurring during ancient times, there is no other logical explanation.

Chapter 4

The Land of Nod

I've been studying The Urantia Book since 1997, and its 2,097 pages, and for several years I have been watching The History Channel's "Ancient Aliens" and have Accumulated almost all the episodes in my DVD collection. Over the years, I have read many books on extraterrestrials. But to me, the most valuable experiences have been with the spirit of God within, and I sincerely believe there is a mental barrier between the higher self and the lower self that we humans must overcome (as mentioned soon we will reach the chapter on God within). Now I see clearly that the "Ancient Aliens," of The History Channel, and the midwayers, of The Urantia Book, are the same beings.

The midwayers played a significant role in our planet's history. They appeared on our earth about the same time as the prince and his staff of 100 arrived. They had their origin in our world but in an inner dimension. How they happen to appear on our earth is so complicated and quite involved, I don't think it would be necessary to recite right now. But they live for thousands of years in that dimension. Over the years, they have been of great help to humans, especially the ones that remain loyal to the higher worlds. Many times, while they are in the process of helping one of us, we take it for granted and think it was an angel. For example, one of the midwayers that were responsible for the superhuman protection of Andrew, one of Jesus' apostles, was responsible for most of the story of Jesus as told in The Urantia Book (around 700 pages).

The first appearance of these creatures of this order, midway between mortals and the spiritual level, the prince and his staff recognized they could be of great help in carrying out the affairs of the prince's headquarters. As mentioned over the years, there were 50 thousand of these beings who came into existence. Those midwayers represented the intelligent group of the prince's administration.

The midwayers traveled far and wide studying and observing the different world races and reported their findings of those races to the prince and his staff at their headquarters. They continued their work until the tragedy of the planetary rebellion. Over four-fifths of the midwayers rebelled, and the loyal group went into service with the Melchizedeks under the leadership of Van until the days of Adam and Eve. The fallen prince was the ruler of those rebellious midwayers who caused havoc on earth. The loyal midwayers, working with Van while trying to civilize humanity, had a difficult time because of them. Information about the midwayers scattered throughout ancient history in the tradition of the different races of mankind. There are records of Sumerian's cuneiforms thousands of years old attempting to describe those beings' records from Egypt, Babylon, and the Sanskrit of India and all-over South America. Those mythologies are based on bits and pieces of facts.

The midwayers who rebelled, as I mentioned, caused a great deal of chaos on our planet before the dispensation of Christ. They were the ones the writers of the Bible called evil spirits and demons. The rebel midwayers were able to reveal themselves to mortals under certain circumstances, and this especially was true of the midwayers who associated with Beelzebub, the leader of the secondary midwayers. He was mentioned several times in the Bible where the Jewish scribes accused Jesus of being part of the Beelzebub group (see Matthew 12:24 or Luke 11:15). Before the days of Christ, these rebel midwayers were able to influence the minds of certain inferior mortals and somewhat control their

actions. It's not just a figure of speech, in the records when they state, "And they brought to Jesus all sorts of sick people, them that were possessed by devils, and lunatics." Matthews 8:16. Jesus was aware of the difference between those who were sick and those who possessed. Those different states were exceedingly confusing to the people living during his time. Today, those who believe in demoniacal possession and the casting out of devils, since the arrival of the Holy Spirit, are confusing demoniacal possession with hysteria, insanity, and feeble-mindedness.

The rebel midwayers under the leadership of Beelzebub seemed to have had a strong influence on ancient India's Hindu religion. In their Vedic literature, some of the stories look more like fantasy; until I started studying The Urantia Book, along with my other studies (for example, H. P. Blavatsky's Secret Doctrine), I was able to put the pieces together. I was amazed at how involved the midwayers were with that race of people during ancient times. The History Channel calls the midwayers involved with ancient India, ancient aliens. The Urantia Book mentioned that about 16 thousand years ago 100 members of the Sethite priesthood migrated to India from Mesopotamia, I believe they are the ones that created the Vedas, India's spiritual literature. Seth was a son of Adam and Eve who started the Sethite priesthood. This group, I believe, was in constant contact with the midwayers. From India's Mahabharata literature it appears the loyal midwayers were in an ongoing battle with the rebel midwayers. India called their battleships Vimana, if there was any kind of nuclear explosion during ancient times, they were responsible. You'll also find battles like those battles on the Sumerians cuneiforms and Babylon's tablets. As I mentioned, the midwayers were able to enter our dimension through some portal or wormhole. The History Channel calls these portals Star-Gate, mainly because of the Indians of South and North America. Before the time of Christ, the rebel midwayers or ancient aliens traveled all over the world trying to rule and control the human races. If you watched the History Channel's "Ancient Aliens," you'll see they were all over the planet, trying to control.

But before Pentecost, no midwayers rebels or fallen angels were able to possess an average person's mind, and since the days of Pentecost, even the weak-minded and inferior mortals are free from such possibilities. There were 50 thousand midwayers on our planet at the time of Lucifer's rebellion; 40,119 had joined the uprising, but there were more midwayers who came into being during the days of Adam and Eve who were loyal. Before Pentecost, the rebel midwayers caused havoc on earth. The rebel midwayers were responsible for almost everything that happens that we call paranormal. They were doing all kinds of weird things with people who were weak minded. These unique creatures were sometimes confused with the cherubim and seraphim who rebelled and were also on earth at the time of Lucifer's rebellion. Some of the older writers of the Bible called the midwayers creatures' evil spirits and demons, and the seraphim and cherubim evil angels and fallen angels. Since Pentecost, the entire group of rebel midwayers is, at present, held prisoner by orders of the ruler of Edentia, awaiting the final adjudication of the affair of the system rebellion. They do not roam our world anymore to make their mischief. Since the days of Pentecost, there could never be such a thing as demoniacal possession. Those midwayers who did not rebel are doing great work for the benefit of humanity.

The Tower of Babel

The physical members of the prince's staff were sex, creatures. One of their purposes was to participate in a plan to procreate that consisted of combined qualities of their order to inbreed with those of a selected stock of the Andon tribes. All of this was in preparation for the coming of Adam and Eve. The Life Carriers had planned a new kind of mortal with the breeding of the offspring of the prince's staff with the first generation of Adam and Eve's offspring. Can you imagine the Life Carriers were planning a super-human race of people? Those beings were to be

the teachers of humankind. But the plan miscarried and, again, we humans were deprived of benign leadership and superior culture. When the prince's staff did reproduce, it was after the rebellion, and they had been denied their connection with the life current of the system and the Tree of Life. After the rebellion, our earth witnessed many unusual things, and the great civilization at Dalamatia was being destroyed.

The Avalon surgeons created bodies for the Caligastia 100, as mentioned earlier, when they arrived on our planet, just as they created bodies for Adam and Eve, and the story passed down to us as God creating those bodies from the dust of the ground or chemical of the earth. After the Avalon surgeons created the bodies, then the Universe Mother Spirit of God breathed the breath of life into those forms. One may wonder why the Avalon surgeons didn't develop super bodies for us. It is because of our experience through evolution, the different stages of life that we will evolve into beings God want us to be. Our bodies are the vehicles that help us gain the necessary experiences needed to give birth to our souls; those beings that the Avalon surgeons made bodies for had already passed through our stage of development. That is why they came to help us. As we continue to evolve through the different stages of our evolution, we are destined to become something we are not yet capable of understanding.

The Higher Being says, while they were hardly the Sons of God, the Prince's staff was regarded as gods by the evolving mortals of that time, and their early descendants. This is the origin of the universal folk tales of gods who came to earth and mated with the daughters of men and beget an ancient race of heroes, the Nodites. This legend became more confused with the race mixtures and the later appearance of Adamites in the second Garden of Eden.

The 100 corporal members of the prince's staff carried germ plasma of the Andonic strains, and it was naturally to be expected that if those 60 who rebelled engaged in sexual reproduction with the Andonites race that their offspring would resemble the Andonite's parents. Much to those Higher Beings surprise, the progeny of the Andonites and the Sangik who inbred with the Nodites rebels, the children were far superior in almost every way to the Andonites and Sangik races. This unexpected excellence was recognized, not only in the physical and intellectual capacity but also spiritual qualities as well, this was over 200 thousand years ago. As I mentioned before this is the reason for the intellectual gap during ancient times plus Adam and Eve descendants.

The pure Nodites race was an incredible race of people. They were the ones with the original elongated heads, but they gradually mingled with the evolutionary races of the earth, and before long, their race considerably deteriorated. Initially, they lived for hundreds of years, but 10 thousand years after the rebellion, their average length of life was little more than the evolutionary races.

When archaeologists excavated clay-tablets records of latter-day Sumerians descendants of the Nodites, they discovered lists of Sumerian kings going back several thousand years. As they go further back, the reign of the individual king lengthened to thousands of years. As mentioned earlier, I believe those kings on the Sumerians King List were the leaders of the councils at Caligastia headquartered in Persian Gulf. These different leaders had access to the Tree of Life, before the rebellion, and were able to live for thousands of years.

People don't understand the Sumerians worked hard to hide the fact they were mixed descendants of the sons of God the Anunnaki who rebelled against God's Laws along with Lucifer, the first sinners on earth. In ancient times that was a big No, No and they didn't want the stigma. They worked hard to replace their ancient history, which is why it is so difficult to connect that race to ancient people, they hid their history. And

that is why it is so complicated to understand their Gilgamesh and such, they used to hide their real history. They appeared on Earth about 200,000 years after the Anunnaki, and most of the story about their history was mythological hiding their real history.

The Nodites found a new city they called Delmun as their national and cultural headquarters. It was about 50 thousand years after the death of Nod. After the descendants of the Caligastia 100, became too numerous for the immediate surroundings of their city to sustain them, and after intermarrying with the Andonites and Sangik tribes that surrounded their borders, their leaders began pondering what could be done to preserve their racial heritage. After many hours of deliberation, the leaders called for a council of the tribes; and after discussing for many more hours, a plan by Bablot, a descendant of Nod, was agreed on. Bablot proposed to erect a grand monument to glorify their race and build this temple in the center of the territory they occupied. This temple was to have a tower like none the world had ever seen. It was to be a memorial praising their past greatness. Some thought the monument should be built in the center of the new city, Dilmun, and there were others who felt such a magnificent structure should be made at a safe distance from the sea. They remembered the old tradition of their first capital Dalmatia destroyed by the sea.

Bablot contended that the new building should be the nucleus for the future center of the Nodites culture and civilization. Bablot's Council finally won out, and construction started according to his plans. The new city was named Bablot after the architect and builder of the tower, this location eventually became known as Bablod and then later as Babel.

It is believed by some the foundation stones, at the temple complex of Baalbek in Lebanon where the Romans built their Temple of Jupiter, are the foundation stones for the building of the Tower of Babel. The Arabs in this area for hundreds of years believed the foundation stones were the foundation for the Tower of Babel as it is their tradition. Some of those foundation stones weigh over 800 tons. If the reader looks up the Temple of Jupiter on Google and views the pictures of the stones, it's a high possibility they are looking at the foundation for the Tower of Babel. See The Urantia Book, paper 77, section 4, 1. The Western or Syrian Nodites.

The Nodites were still at odds in their sentiments regarding the plans and purpose of this undertaking, and the leaders were not in agreement. After four and one-half years of working on the project, a significant dispute broke out, and they couldn't agree on the motive for building or their use after completion. Word got back to the tribes, and a high number of people began to gather around the construction site. Here is a list of the disagreements:

1. The largest group (almost half) desired to see the tower built as a memorial to the Nodite's history and racial superiority. They thought it should be a grand and imposing structure, which would challenge the admiration of all future generations.

The next largest faction wanted the tower designed to commemorate the Dilmun culture for they foresaw that Bablot would become a high center of commerce, art, and manufacturing.

2. The smallest and minority contingent held that the erection of the tower presented the opportunity for making atonement for the folly of their progenitors in participating in the Caligastia rebellion. They maintained that the tower should be devoted to the worship of the Father of all and that the whole purpose of the new city should be to take the place of Dalmatia to function as the cultural and religious center for the surrounding barbarians.

The religious folks were quickly voted down. The majority of the Nodites denied the teaching that their ancestors were guilty of rebellion, and they resented such a racial stigma. Disposing of one proposal to the dispute, and failing to settle the other two by debate, they resorted to fighting. The religious people fled to their homes in the south while their cohorts fought until almost all were killed. It is where the Bible refers to their language being confused, and they scattered throughout the earth, Genesis 11:8, "So the Lord scattered them abroad from thence upon the face of all the earth: and they left off the building of the city."

You can see the intricate conspiracy to hide their ancestors' shame and their identity, in Dan Brown book, The DA Vinci Code. This conspiracy has been going on ever since the time of the Bible, sons of God having children by the daughters of men Genesis 6:4. They brought sin to our planet earth when they rebelled against God's will, and their descendants have been trying to hide it ever since. The original Nodites ancestors, who were the sons of God, of Genesis 6:4, reached a high state-of-mind on the mansion worlds, and their descendants inherited part of that state of mind; and they were far ahead of the average tribes of their times. They were the men of renown of Genesis 6:4, and many thousands of years later became the Aryan and Sumerian races, who were very advanced people. Philip Coppens, an investigative journalist, who has been a guest on The History Channel's "Ancient Aliens" since its inception, wrote in his book, Ancient Alien Question, page 44, that there has been a vast conspiracy going on for thousands of years that have been traced all the way back to Sumer, the land of the Sumerians, over 6,000 years ago. But it goes back thousands of years before that. We of planet earth, need to wake up we have been duped. If we show some efforts that we are trying to help ourselves, the Higher Sons and Daughters of God will be willing to help us. Everyone recognizes that if people are not willing to help themselves, there is little anyone else can do for them.

Two writers who go into details about fallen angels, are Christian O'Brien and his wife Barbara O'Brien of Britain who wrote The Genius of the Few; and they were close to the truth, in my opinion; although they wouldn't say where they thought those beings come from.

Did you know the writer of The Book of Enoch was talking about the sons of God in Genesis 6:4 when he mentioned "Watchers"? Genesis 6:4 states: "There were giants in the earth in those days; and also, after that, when the sons of God came unto the daughters of men, and they bare children to them, the same became mighty men which were of old, men of renown."

Enoch 15:1-2 states: "Then addressing me He spoke and said, hear neither be afraid, O righteous Enoch thou scribe of righteousness, approach hither, and hear my voice. Go say to the Watchers of Heaven, who have sent thee to pray for them; you ought to pray for men, and not men pray for you.

Wherefore, you have forsaken the lofty and holy heaven, which endures forever, and have lain with women: have defiled yourselves with the daughters of men; have taken yourselves wives; have act like the sons of earth and have begotten an impious offspring." The Book of Enoch 15:8 states: "Now the Nephilim, who have been born of the spirit and flesh, shall be called upon earth evil spirit, and the earth shall be their habitation. Evil spirit shall proceed from their flesh because they were created from above; from the holy Watchers their beginning and primary foundation." Friends, it states right here they were created from above, from the holy Watchers their beginning and primary foundation. And those Watchers were none other than the sons of God mentioned in Genesis 6:4, where sons of God had children by the daughters of men. And

according to The Book of Enoch, their offspring are the evil spirits upon earth. The writer of The Book of Enoch warned us of the chaos those evil spirits would cause on Earth, and you all know that our planet has had its share of trials and tribulations.

In the second century A.D., a Rabbi, by the name of Simeon Ben Jochai, pronounced a curse on whoever read the Book of Enoch (for whatever reason). The Book of Enoch was banned, burned, and shredded. The Book of Enoch brought out the truth about the fallen rebels. In the Western World, no one has heard about the Book of Enoch for more than a thousand years. The book was rediscovered in an Ethiopic Church by a Scottish explorer James Bruce, in 1773. I guess the fallen ones didn't want anyone to recognize them. I suggest to those who are sincere seekers to read the Book of Enoch and The Urantia Book and see if the puzzle of life doesn't start coming together. ¹ The above story was told in Forbidden Mysteries of Enoch, by Elizabeth Clare Prophet.

"Before the eighteenth century, scholars had believed the Book of Enoch to be irretrievably lost: composed long before the birth of Christ and considered to be one of the most important pieces of Jewish mystical literature, it was only known from fragments and references to it in other texts. James Bruce changed all this by procuring several copies of the missing work during his stay in Ethiopia. These were the first complete editions of the Book of Enoch ever to be seen in Europe." (Quoted from Graham Hancock, The Sign and the Seal.)

It suggested that the reason for banning The Book of Enoch was because the powerful theologians didn't like some of the statements from the book about angels instigating illicit love affairs with earthly women. The Book of Enoch says watchers were having affairs with earthly women. Enoch 12:5-6 states: "Then the Lord said unto me: Enoch scribe of righteousness, go tell the Watchers of Heaven, who have deserted the lofty sky, and their holy everlasting station, who have polluted with women. And have done as the sons of men do, by taking themselves wives, and who was greatly corrupted on earth." The Book of Enoch plainly states that it was the Watchers who polluted themselves with women; just as in Genesis 6:4, sons of God having children by the daughter of men; they didn't say anything about angels. Angels and Watchers were mentioned in Enoch to emphasize they were from heaven or higher worlds. Those that banned The Book of Enoch did so because the book identifies them. They are all over the world; and their primary concerns are about prestige, power, and wealth. Chapters 3 and 4 explain how their ancient ancestors were the original sons of God in Genesis 6:4.

One of those problems was the Bible's verse Genesis 6:4 where celestial sons of God had children with humans. That verse was no myth, and the strange thing about such an important event is that there is no information on why those sons came and had children with humans. Genesis 6:2 tried to explain, "That the sons of God saw the daughters of men that they were fair; (beautiful) and they took them, wives of all which they chose." And if you did your homework, you would know that is a lie, those sons came to earth thousands of years ago, and humanity was still in the hunter-gatherers' stage, are you going to tell me those women were beautiful?

Whoever wrote The Book of Enoch gave us a bird's-eye view of how those rebellious Nodites acted during his times (from what he read or heard), and he called their ancestors Watchers. During the time the Book of Enoch was written there must have been pure-line Nodites who were more concerned about their superiority than anything else. They may have been superior thousands of years ago, but their ancestors were also the ones who rebelled against God's law. They didn't want to accept that part of their so-called superiority and to avoid this; many became atheists as the easy way out. Their ancestors are the ones who brought sin to our planet the writer of the Book of Enoch complained.

Many of those belligerent Nodites migrated to Europe and caused havoc on that continent throughout the years and spread throughout the Middle East. They went to many countries. They used the Cro-Magnon man, the Blue race that became the White race in Europe, as their shield to hide behind while they caused havoc during the Dark Age in Europe.

On the other hand, you have the religious groups that wanted to show remorse for their progenitor's mistake. It's not that God punishes us for the error of our ancestors, but anyone can see you can inherit a situation many years later. Here, we have the belligerent ones who are selfish and want to do their own thing; and we have those who are loving and kind, who strive to do God's will. These people will help save our planet. It is not benefiting God when we are asked to do his will; it is for our benefit. God's law is the nature of our existence, and how we will survive.

Around 12 thousand years ago, there was a second attempt to build the Tower of Babel by the mixed races of Mesopotamia: the Andites, Nodites, and Adamites. They attempted to erect a new temple where the old one was started, but there was insufficient support to see the project through. This region was long known as the Land of Babel. The Andites were the result of inbreeding between the Nodites and the Adamites, and they were the beginning of the Aryans and Sumerians, who were very advanced people. We must realize after thousands of years the story of the Tower of Babel has changed many times. The original attempt to build the Tower of Babel happened about 50 thousand years after Lucifer's rebellion and over 100 thousand years before Adam and Eve's appearance on Earth. According to the Bible, this is how the story told in the days of the Old Testament was compiled. "And they said, let us build us a city and a tower, whose top may reach unto heaven, and let us make us a name, lest we are scattered abroad upon the face of the whole earth.

And the Lord came down to see the city and the tower, which the children of men had built. And the Lord said, Behold the people is one, and they have all one language, and this they begin to do: and nothing will be restrained from them, which they have imagined doing. Let us go down, and confound their language, so that they may not understand one another's speech.

So, the Lord scattered them abroad from thence upon the face of all the earth: and they left off to build the city. Therefore, is the name of it called Babel; because the Lord confounded the language of all the earth: and from thence did the Lord scatter them aboard upon the face of all the earth," Genesis 11: 4-8. That was when the Nodites race, or the people who tried to build the Tower of Babel, spread out around the globe.

The Nodites Centers of Civilization

The dispersion of the Nodites was the result of the conflict over the Tower of Babel. This war among themselves significantly reduced the pure-line Nodites. And was, in many ways, responsible for their failure to establish a tremendous pre-Adamic civilization. The Nodite people decreased over a period of 100,000 years until the Adamic inbreeding uplifted it. But even in the days of Adam, the Nodites were still a mighty people. Many of their mixed descendants helped to build the Garden of Eden and several of Van's group captains were Nodites.

I think that the much talked about Atlantis and their advanced people were Nodites. They were getting so advanced on the so-called legendary island or place that was destroyed, they would eventually have disrupted the natural evolution of the entire planet and God's purpose for humanity. Three out of the four great Nodites centers were established immediately after the Bablot conflict.

1. *The western or Syrian Nodites. The remnants of the nationalistic or racial memorialists journeyed northward, uniting with the Andonites to found the later Nodite centers to the northwest of Mesopotamia. This was the largest group of the dispersing Nodites, and they contributed much to the later appearing Assyrian stock.*

2. *The eastern or Elamite Nodites. The culture and commerce advocates migrated in large numbers eastward into Elam and there united with the mixed Sangik tribes. The Elamites of thirty to forty thousand years ago had become largely Sangik in nature, although they continued to maintain a civilization superior to that of the surrounding barbarians.*

After the establishment of the second Garden, it was customary to allude to this nearby Nodite settlement as “the land of Nod”; and during the long period of relative peace between this Nodite group and the Adamites, the two races were greatly blended, for it became more and more the custom for the Sons of God (the Adamites) to intermarry with the daughters of men (the Nodites).

3. *The central or pre-Sumerian Nodites. A small group at the mouth of the Tigris and Euphrates rivers maintained more of their racial integrity. They persisted for thousands of years and eventually furnished the Nodite ancestry which blended with the Adamites to found the Sumerian peoples of historic times.*

And all this explains how the Sumerians appeared so suddenly and mysteriously on the stage of action in Mesopotamia. Investigators will never be able to trace out and follow these tribes back to the beginning of the Sumerians, who had their origin two hundred thousand years ago after the submergence of Dalamatia. Without a trace of origin elsewhere in the world, these ancient tribes suddenly loom upon the horizon of civilization with a full-grown and superior culture, embracing temples, metalwork, agriculture, animals, pottery, weaving, commercial law, civil codes, religious ceremonial, and an old system of writing. At the beginning of the historical era, they had long since lost the alphabet of Dalamatia, having adopted the peculiar writing system originating in Dilmun. The Sumerian language, though virtually lost to the world, was not Semitic; it had much in common with the so-called Aryan tongues.

The elaborate records left by the Sumerians describe the site of a remarkable settlement which was located on the Persian Gulf near the earlier city of Dilmun. The Egyptians called this city of ancient glory Dilmāt, while the later Adamized Sumerians confused both the first and second Nodite cities with Dalamatia and called all three Dilmun. And already have archaeologists found these ancient Sumerian clay tablets which tell of this earthly paradise “where the Gods first blessed mankind with the example of civilized and cultured life.” And these tablets, descriptive of Dilmun, the paradise of men and God, are now silently resting on the dusty shelves of many museums.

77:4.9 The Sumerians knew well of the first and second Eden but, despite extensive intermarriage with the Adamites, continued to regard the garden dwellers to the north as an alien race. Sumerian pride in the more ancient Nodite culture led them to ignore these later vistas of glory in favor of the grandeur and paradisiacal traditions of the city of Dilmun.

4. *The northern Nodites and Amadonites — the Vanites. This group arose prior to the Bablot conflict. These northernmost Nodites were descendants of those who had forsaken the leadership of Nod and his successors for that of Van and Amadon.*

Some of the early associates of Van subsequently settled about the shores of the lake which still bears his name, and their traditions grew up about this locality. Ararat became their sacred mountain, having much the same meaning to later-day Vanites that Sinai had to the Hebrews.

Ten thousand years ago the Vanite ancestors of the Assyrians taught that their moral law of seven commandments had been given to Van by the Gods upon Mount Ararat. They firmly believed that Van and his associate Amadon were taken alive from the planet while they were up on the mountain engaged in worship.

Mount Ararat was the sacred mountain of northern Mesopotamia, and since much of your tradition of these ancient times was acquired in connection with the Babylonian story of the flood, it is not surprising that Mount Ararat and its region were woven into the later Jewish story of Noah and the universal flood. About 37,000 B.C. Adamson [one of Adam and Eve's son] visited one of the easternmost of the old Vanite settlements to find his center of civilization. ²

In The Book of Enoch, Chapters 14-15, the writer warned his people not to associate with the Nodites or (Nephilim) He warned they would teach them how to sin against God. The writer taught his people that thousands of years before their time the Nodites or ancestors rebelled against the laws of God. The Book of Enoch called the beings The Urantia Book calls celestial sons of God, Watchers, and fallen angels. By the time The Book of Enoch was written about 300 years before Christ, the Nodites were slowly dying out. With the information the writer provided in The Book of Enoch Chapter 14-15 you can see the original bodies those Watchers were using were made for them by beings from higher worlds that we call heaven. Professor Samuel Noah Kramer one of the greatest Assyriologists of our times wrote in his book titled The Sumerians on page 20 in the first section of paragraph 1 and I quote: "Here then we learn for the first time of the possibility that there had existed a non-Semitic people and a non-Semitic language in Mesopotamia." They later called these people Sumerians, from where did these people come, if not the descendants of the sons of God of Genesis 6:4 that had children by the daughters of men, they were different than anyone else in all of Mesopotamia. Thousands of years later they became the Sumerians. The book of Enoch mentioned they were different.

Years ago, the Nodites who were often called Nephilim went around bragging about being descendants of gods. When humanity Hunter-gather became civilized the one who wrote the book of Enoch wanted to know why they were considered offspring of gods. He went in search and opened the Pandora Book of the Nephilim; in ancient times they were called Nephilim. Not all Nephilim were giants, but all descendants of the celestial sons of God who had children with humans in Genesis 6:4 and became men of renown were known for thousands of years as Nephilim; those sons were the first sinners on Earth and their offspring are the ones that went around bragging they were descendants of gods. After the one who wrote The Book of Enoch exposed them they went into hiding until recently.

Chapter 5

The Garden of Eden

Archaeologists, anthropologists, and historians have for many years struggled to discover who built the vast structures around the world, such as the Sphinx, the Pyramids of Giza, and places like Puma Punku in Bolivia. Some like The History Channel Ancient Aliens personnel assumed it was extraterrestrials, I doubt it very much if extraterrestrials would go all over the world and build those structures, it would have to be someone more permanent. One of the main purposes I believe for building those megalithic structures was to help civilize the tribes of the earth through discipline. The History Channel constantly presents information about these ancient places far removed from each other but have some of the same costumes such as the Dogon of Africa and the Incas of South America or the Egyptians. How do they account for that, as I said it had to be someone more permanent, people don't learn those complication procedures overnight.

After searching all my adult life for God, at age 60, in 1997 I discovered The Urantia Book and found what I was looking for the book has 2,097 pages was compiled in the late 1920s and early 1930s has no human author, was published in 1955, and was blacklisted by the Illuminati—Cabal ever since. That is why most people never heard of the book. They made sure most of the colleges denied its value, which they control many of them. They would claim since the book has no human author spooks wrote the book. The book points to The Elite, Cabal, and Illuminati as descendants of the celestial sons of God in Genesis 6:4 who had children with humans who became men of renown. Those sons of God in Genesis committed the first sins on earth. The Hunter-gatherers weren't civilized yet. With the help of The Urantia Book, I was able to put much of the enigma of our ancient ancestors' lost history back together.

If you read Genesis 4:8-17 in the Bible, you will learn according to those verses it would have been impossible for Adam and Eve to have been the first two people on Earth. One example is after Cain had killed his brother Abel and was forced to leave the Garden of Eden; he was afraid that someone would kill him. Cain and Able were supposed to be the only two humans on Earth besides their parents. And Cain goes to the Land of Nod where he finds a wife, wouldn't his wife's parents have to be older than Cain and most of the people in the Land of Nod?

If Adam and Eve had not come, many would still be in the hunter-gatherer stage of their evolution. Just look at the hunter-gatherers today that have been separated from the rest of humanity, they are far behind in their development.

When Adam and Eve arrived on our planet bodies were rematerialized for them right in the Garden of Eden. They were commanded to be fruitful and multiply Genesis 1:28. After thousands of years, there were hundreds of thousands of Adam and Eve's descendants, and they started to spread their genes all over the planet, they are the intellectual giants of the UFO researchers are looking for. The History Channel Ancient Aliens episode of the Grays claimed elongated hair skulls had been found all over the planet and geneticists claim they are humans plus; I have discovered

they are Adam and Eve's descendants through The Urantia Book. Those descendants of Adam and Eve were very advanced. They are the ones that built places like Gobekli Tepe the 12 thousand years old advanced site in Turkey. After thousands of years of breeding around the world, their genes waned until they reached a normal evolutionary level, plus improved genes. I sincerely believe Adam and Eve, descendants were so advanced they were able to activate the energy of the soul and use some type of anti-gravity to move those megalithic structures, which we'll be able to do in the distant future.

To this day, archaeologists cannot figure out how the Egyptians suddenly became civilized; they say it appears to have happened overnight. However, this book presents substantial evidence that the Atlanteans helped them become one of the world's greatest ancient civilizations. This makes sense; there is no other answer. Plato mentioned in his writings the Atlanteans were very advanced people; with the help of The Urantia Book, putting the pieces together, I worked out where I believed Atlantis was and who were their people. Most experts believe Atlantis was around the Mediterranean Sea near the pillars of Hercules (generally thought of as the Strait of Gibraltar). How did the Atlanteans become so advanced? Well, as mentioned they were none other than the descendants of sons of God, the Anunnaki of the Sumerians who had children with the daughters of men, in Genesis 6:4. They became men of renown; they attempted to build The Tower of Babel in history. After they scattered see Genesis 11:8, the majority went to Syria. Evidence points to the majority who went to Syria and took over the Garden of Eden after Adam, Eve, and their group were forced out. They stayed there for 4,000 years until the Garden of Eden was destroyed by natural disasters known at that time as Atlantis. When Atlantis was destroyed, the survivors went to a land known as Khem (Egypt).

Here is circumstantial evidence that the Atlanteans were the builders of the Sphinx and Pyramid of Giza in a book titled The Emerald Tablets—Of—Thoth—the—Atlantean, on pages 3-4, paragraphs 4-5, I quote: "Called me than the Master, saying: "Gather ye together my people. Take them by the arts ye have learned of far across the waters until ye reach the land of the hairy barbarians dwelling in caves of the desert. Follow there the plan that ye know of." Gathered, I then my people and entered the great ship of the Master. Upward we rose into the morning. Dark beneath lay the Temple. Suddenly over it rose the waters. They vanished from Earth until the time appointed was the great Temple.

Fast we fled toward the Sun of the morning until beneath us lay the land of the children of Khem (Egypt). Raging, they came with cudgel and spears lifted in anger seeking to slay and utterly destroy the Sons of Atlantis, then rise I my staff and directed a ray of vibration, striking them still in their tracts as fragments of stone of the mountain. Then spoke I to them in words calm and peaceful, telling them of the might of Atlantis, saying we are children of the Sun and its messengers. Cowed I them by my display of magic-science, until at my feet they groveled when I released them. Long dwelt we in the land of Khem (Egypt)."

I am quoting this section of The Urantia Book because it tells us Egypt was advanced 30 thousand years ago. 80:1.3 *For more than thirty thousand years, Egypt received a steady stream of Mesopotamians, who brought along their art and culture to enrich that of the Nile valley. But the ingress of large numbers of the Sahara peoples greatly deteriorated the early civilization along the Nile so that Egypt reached its lowest cultural level some fifteen thousand years ago.* I believe the Atlanteans were long-headed and were Sun worshipers, and once again, I quote from Paper 81, section 4, and paragraph 2 of The Urantia Book": *"Each of the Urantia races was identified by certain distinguishing physical characteristics.*

The Adamites and Nodites were longheaded.” The Adamites were the descendants of Adam and Eve; the Nodites were the ancestors of the ones who went to Syria and the people of the Land of Nod. Back at that time, the descendants of the sons of God were known as Nephilim or Nodites.

In the quote above, Atlanteans were Sun Worshipers. And Akhenaten the Pharaoh tried to convert his people back to Sun Worshiping, and he had an elongated head. More circumstantial evidence. The Urantia Book claims the Garden of Eden was a long narrow peninsula—almost an Island—projecting westward from the eastern shores of the Mediterranean Sea. The explorer Robert Sarmast believes he has discovered the site of Atlantis. For years people have been talking about Plato’s Atlantis. Sarmast and his group believe they found it at the eastern tip of the Mediterranean Sea. Here is what Graham Hancock had to say about Egypt in “Fingerprints of the Gods” on Page 135 paragraph 2 makes the statement: “The archaeologists’ evidence suggested that rather than developing slowly and painfully as is normal with human societies, the civilization of Ancient Egypt, like that of the Olmecs. Emerged all at once fully formed. Indeed, the period of transition from primitive to advanced society appears to have been so short that it makes no kind of historical sense. Technological skills that should have taken hundreds of years even thousands of years to evolve were brought into use almost overnight—and with no apparent antecedents whatsoever.”

A journalist Will Hart wrote in his book, *The Genesis Race* about 40,000 years ago around the same time the Neanderthals disappeared a crucial transformational event occurred. One group of scientists is sure that a significant genetically based neurological change took place in *Homo sapiens* at that time see page 179. Adam, Eve, and their descendants are one of the groups of people of the most advanced civilizations researchers have been looking for.

After Tabamantia’s inspection, for almost 100 years, Van, and his staff from their highland headquarters of world ethics and culture had preached the coming of a Son and Daughter of God, racial up-lifters, worthy successors of the traitorous Caligastia. But the majority of the world’s people during that period showed little or no interest in this announcement. But those who were in direct contact with Van and Amadon took the teachings seriously and began plans for the promised Son and Daughter’s arrival.

Van related to his close friends the story of the Material Sons and Daughters on Jerusem as he learned about them before coming to our planet. He knew that those Adamic Sons and Daughters always lived in a simple, but beautiful Garden home. Van proposed 83 years before the arrival of Adam and Eve that they should devote themselves to the building of the Garden home for their reception.

At their highland headquarters, and from 61 scattered tribes, Van and Amadon gathered a corps of over 3 thousand willing workers, all volunteers who dedicated themselves to the mission of preparing for the expected Son and Daughter. Van separated his volunteers into 100 different companies, with a captain over each, and an associate who served on his staff as a liaison officer. He kept Amadon as his associate. These 100 groups all began the preliminary work. One group was commissioned to find a suitable spot for the Garden's location and went forth in search of the ideal place.

Caligastia and Daligastia had been stripped of most of their power to do evil by that time. They tried everything possible to impede and frustrate the work of Van and his staff in preparing the Garden of Eden. But their evilness was nullified mainly by the faithful activities of almost 10 thousand loyal midwayers. The loyal midwayers tirelessly labored to advance the Garden project (the midwayers are the beings I mentioned they are in vibration between man and angels).

The Garden Site

The committee responsible for locating a site for the Garden was absent for almost three years before they found three suitable places for the Garden location. The first was an island in the Persian Gulf; the second, an area between the Tigris and Euphrates rivers; and the third, a long narrow Peninsula, almost an island projecting westward from the eastern shores of the Mediterranean Sea. Almost unanimously, the committee favored the third site. It took them two more years to transfer the world's cultural headquarters, including the Tree of Life, to this Mediterranean peninsula. The Mediterranean peninsula had a healthy and wholesome climate. Its stabilized weather was due to the surrounding mountains and the fact that this area was just an island in a sea of islands. Although rain was plentiful in the surrounding highlands, it seldom rained directly in Eden. But each night from the extensive network of artificial irrigation channels, a mist would rise to refresh the vegetables in the Garden. The area picked for the Garden was no doubt the most beautiful location of its kind in the entire world. The climate was ideal. Nowhere else was there a place that could have given itself so perfectly to becoming a beautiful paradise of botanic expression? In this area, the best of the earth's civilization was gathering. Outside and beyond, the world was in darkness, ignorance, and savagery. Eden was a beautiful, bright spot-on Earth. It soon became a beautiful and perfected landscape of glory. Thus, says The Urantia Book.

Establishing the Garden

It is also said in The Urantia Book that when Material Sons and Daughters, the biological up-lifers, begin their journey on an evolutionary world, their place of residence is usually called "The Garden of Eden" because it so resembles the floral and botanic beauty of Edentia, the constellation capital to which our constellation belongs. Van instructed that Eden was to be a Garden and no animal would be slaughtered within its boundaries. Also, all flesh eaten by the Garden workers throughout all the years of construction was brought in from the herd outside the Garden on the mainland. Their first task was building a brick wall across the neck of the peninsula. Once completed, the work of beautifying the landscape and building homes could proceed without incident.

In preparing the Garden of Eden, they used only volunteer laborers. They cultivated it and tended their herd for support. The contribution of food received from nearby believers. This grand endeavor was carried through to its completion despite the confused state of the world during those troubled times. At one point, Van suggested that they should train the younger generation to do the work of carrying on the enterprise in case the expected biologic up-lifers are delayed. It seemed a lack of faith on Van's part, which started quite a bit of trouble. It caused many desertions; still, Van continued with his planned readiness, filling the empty spots with younger volunteers.

The Garden Home

The keepers of the Garden of Eden are placed at the center of this Edenic Peninsula Garden, at the stone temple of the Universal Father, the sacred shrine of the Garden. To the north, they built the administrative headquarters; the west provided grounds for schools and the educational system of the expected Son and Daughter. In "East of Eden" homes were built intended for the promised ones and their offspring. The architectural plan for Eden provided homes and abundant land for one million people.

At the time of Adam and Eve's arrival, the Garden was only one-fourth finished. It had thousands of miles of irrigation ditches and more than 12,000 miles of paved paths and roads. There were a little over 5,000 brick buildings in the various areas. The trees and bushes were almost beyond counting; the roads and trails were well-built, and the landscaping was beautiful.

The sanitary system was by far the most advanced of anything that was tried before on earth. The drinking water in Eden was kept pure by strict obedience to the sanitary codes designed to preserve its purity. In the early days, much trouble came from those who were having difficulty following these rules. But Van finally impressed upon his associates not to let anything fall into the drinking water. Before there was a sewage disposal system, the Edenites practiced the burial of all waste material, especially material that was decomposing. Amadon's inspectors made their rounds each day to make sure there was nothing around that could cause sickness.

The Garden of Eden was ready for Adam and his consort, although barely finished, already a gem of botanic beauty. Adam was pleased with the basic plans of the garden, although they did make changes in furnishing their dwellings. During the early years of Adam and Eve's occupancy, the place took on new beauty and grandeur.

The Tree of Life

Van planted the long-guarded Tree of Life in the Garden's circular courtyard at Father Temple with leaves for the "healing of the nation" and with fruits that had sustained him on earth for so long. Van knew that Adam and Eve would also depend on this gift from Edentia to continue their lives after they appeared on Earth in material bodies.

On the higher worlds, the Material Sons and Daughters do not require the Tree of Life to give them a continuation of life; only in the repersonalization of their bodies on earth were they dependent on this tree for physical immortality. The "tree of knowledge of good and evil" may be symbolic or a figure of speech. The Higher Beings tell us the Tree of Life was no myth; it is real and was present for a long time here on earth. When the Most Highs on Edentia approved Caligastia being Prince of our planet, and the 100 Jerusem citizens as his staff, they sent it to our planet by way of the Melchizedeks, a shrub of Edentia, and this plant grew to be the Tree of Life on earth. These super plants stored up specific space energy that was antidotal to the age-producing elements of animal existence. The fruits of the Tree of Life were like a super-chemical storage battery that mysteriously released the life-extension force of the universe when eaten. Its fruit was useless to the ordinary evolutionary being on earth. Yet, its use to the 100 materialized members of the Caligastia staff, and to the 100 modified Andonites who had contributed their life plasma to the prince's team, was invaluable, making it possible for them to use the fruit of the Tree of Life for an indefinite extension of their otherwise mortal existence on earth.

In the days of the prince's rule, the Tree of Life was growing from the earth in the central circular courtyard of the Father Temple. During the rebellion, Van and his associates in their temporary camp re-grew the Tree of Life from the central core. The Tree of Life was later taken to their Highland retreat, where it served Van and Amadon for thousands of years. I am aware this is somewhat difficult to believe, that someone could live for thousands of years; but writers like Jim Marrs, *Rule by Secrecy* also reported this story that thousands of years ago, people of the Sumerian race left tablets behind, stating that beings from higher worlds visited our planet, and they lived here for thousands of years.

Adam and Eve

[74:0.1] *Adam and Eve arrived on Urantia from the year A.D. 1934, 37,848 years ago. It was in midseason when the Garden was in the height of bloom that they arrived. At high noon and unannounced the two seraphic transports accompanied by the Jerusem personnel entrusted with the biologic uplifters to Urantia, settled slowly to the surface of the revolving planet in the vicinity of the temple of the Universal Father. All the work of rematerializing the bodies of Adam and Eve was carried on within the precincts of this newly created shrine. And from the time of their arrival, ten days passed before they were re-created in dual human form for presentation as the world's new rulers. They regained consciousness simultaneously. The Material Son and Daughter always served together. It is the essence of their service at all times and all places never to be separated. They are designed to work in pairs; seldom do they work alone. '*

As I read over this paragraph, a thought crossed my mind: Adam and Eve were able to appreciate the fact that their bodies were “created” for them, so they knew for sure that they were not their bodies. Their bodies were only instruments for their use, which some of us humans need to understand regarding our bodies. Also stated in the paragraph, Adam and Eve always worked in pairs, which reminded me of “Soul Mates.” Most of those Higher Beings work in pairs they call each other complementary opposite.

Throughout the years, I've heard about the concept of soulmates or complementary opposites. There was a time when I was a little leery about this concept because I've heard of so many people destroying their lives. Those individuals in what some so-called religious leaders told them who their soul mate was. Based on this information, they get married, then quickly find out it was the worst mistake of his/her life. I believe it was the individual's mistake, made because of a lack of experience and understanding of the concept.

For the past 20 years or so, I've learned that most cultures of the world believe in some concept based on a complementary opposite, for instance, China and the yin and yang. In my search, I've been forced to accept this concept to a limited degree due to an abundance of evidence pointing in that direction. For example, the story of Adam and Eve has always been a puzzle to me. Why did Adam eat the apple after Eve? Adam was supposed to be perfect before being kicked out of the garden. Being perfect, he must have known the consequences. I'm aware the story is in allegorical form, but I believe that Adam purposely ate the apple. In other words, Adam committed the same sin because he knew that Eve was going to be sent back to where they came from. They were complimentary opposites, and he couldn't stand the thought of them being away from each other for perhaps thousands of years. He purposely ate the apple, so they would be sent back together. It turned out they both had to stay.

I now read the story of Adam and Eve from a different point of view found in The Urantia Book. The way they relate the story, and through my experience, I was able to put the puzzle together concerning the reason for man being on this planet. The story of Adam and Eve unfolds in The Urantia Book, as a sad, but beautiful story; it is much more believable than what we have been taught. I will now explore the story of Adam and Eve in greater detail. The Cabal, the Illuminati's ancient ancestors known in ancient times as Nephilim distorted all our ancient ancestors' history.

From my understanding of life, we were initially androgynous when we came out of the first source. As that Universal Being is one, then, as we became individual personalities, we split up and became male and female; the other half is our complimentary opposite. That is one reason why most of us have that insatiable urge to be with the opposite sex. We seem to be in a constant subconscious search for that other half.

Women are the portal for the manifestation of the personality into the physical plane, and therefore, the development of the soul. I sometimes wonder about ancient times when women were held in high esteem. I wonder about their degraded state; was it due to jealousy in those ancient times?

At some point in history perhaps man resented this being the only way for him to enter life on the physical plane or were women getting too much praise and were becoming like the gods? What would be the reason to mistreat the very entity that brought you into the world? We should honor the life that did so much to help bring us onto this planet for the opportunity to develop our souls. Women should accept their position and be humble and grateful to that Universal Being for the privilege and opportunity to serve life. At this stage of our development, we are like sculptures; we can mold our souls into beautiful structures to help uplift the consciousness of humankind.

Reading from The Urantia Book, I discovered that before Adam and Eve arrived on our planet, they were members of what they called a senior corps of Material Sons and Daughters of God in a world they called Jerusem. Being jointly numbered 14,311, it also mentioned that Adam and Eve were a little over eight feet tall. I appreciate the way The Urantia Book gives details about everything. It states that Adam and Eve were employed in the trial-and-testing natural laboratories on Jerusem for more than 15,000 years. They had been directors of the Division of Experimental Energy as applied to the modification of living forms before being chosen to come to our planet. It also mentioned in the book that before holding this job, they had been teachers in the citizenship school for new arrivals on Jerusem. They honestly had an impressive portfolio.

When the mandate was issued calling for volunteers for the mission of Adamic Adventures on earth, the entire senior corps of Material Sons and Daughters volunteered. One of the Higher Beings (referred to as) a Melchizedek Examiner, with the approval of the Most Highs of Edentia, finally selected Adam and Eve to become the biological up-lifters of Urantia, our earth.

Adam and Eve remained loyal to Michael, the Creator Son of our local universe, during the Lucifer rebellion. The pair presented Michael, our universe sovereign, and his entire staff for instruction and examination. They were given all the details concerning our planet and carefully instructed as to the plan to be pursued if they accepted the responsibilities of leadership in our strife-torn world. They were given joint oaths of allegiance to the Most Highs of Edentia and Michael of Salvington. (Salvington, the headquarters world of the local universe of Nebadon, home of the Creator Son Michael (Jesus) and the Universe Spirit Mother).

The arrival of Adam and Eve

Adam and Eve fell asleep on Jerusem and awakened in the Father Temple on earth in the Garden of Eden. There was a vast audience assembled to welcome them. They were face to face with the two beings they had heard so much about, Van and his faithful companion, Amadon. These two heroes of the Caligastia rebellion who remained loyal to Michael were the first to welcome the biological up-lifters to their new Garden home. On that day, there was a great deal of excitement and joy in Eden. Runners went in haste to the place where carrier pigeons were kept, shouting, "Turn loose the birds; let them carry the word. The promised Son and Daughter have arrived."

Tribes who believed in Van by the hundreds kept up the supply of those homing pigeons year after year for just an occasion, to spread the news of Adam and Eve's arrival throughout the land. Thousands of nearby tribes accepted the teachings of Van and Amadon. For months, pilgrims poured into Eden to welcome the newly arrived couple and to give praise to the unseen Father.

Right after their awakening, Adam and Eve were escorted to the reception hall, on the high mound north of the Father Temple. This hall was made ready for the world's new rulers. At noon, the world reception committee welcomed this son and Daughter from Jerusem. It was a grand reception where Adam and Eve were given charge of our planet. There were Higher Beings present that the average human could not see, such as the chief of the midwayers, senior Melchizedek's chief, two resident Life Carriers, and much more. But Van and Amadon were able to see these Higher Beings. Adam and Eve were given ceremonial robes for this special occasion, the time of their formal induction into world rulership.

[74:2.8] Then was heard the archangel's proclamation, and the broadcast voice of Gabriel decreed the second judgment roll call of Urantia and the resurrection of the sleeping survivors of the second dispensation grace and mercy on 606 of Satania. The dispensation of the prince has passed the age of Adam, the second planetary epoch, opens amidst scenes of simple grandeur, and the new rulers start their reign under seemingly favorable condition, notwithstanding the world-wide confusion occasioned by lack of cooperation of their predecessor in authority on the planet.²

When they referred to 606 of Satania, they were talking about our planet. Every time there is a new dispensation, there is the resurrection of the dead; those that did not have faith enough to resurrect into higher worlds, when they passed on in this world, they were put to sleep. Before they are put to rest it appears they must go through years of purification that is to purify them of distorted energy (vibration) they had accumulated over the years. Then, they are raised up when there is a new age or new dispensation and sent forth to those higher worlds. From my understanding, all they seem to lose is a lot of time; but in those higher worlds, this could be very meaningful. It appears that we were pre-wired to become spiritual beings; when we are out of sequence, that's when we distort the vibration around us and bring on trials and tribulations in our lives due to the distortion of this vibration. A biological research team at Bielefeld University in Germany is doing great work in studying the vibration around living things.

After their formal initiation into rulership of our planet, Adam and Eve became dreadfully aware of their planetary isolation. Soundless was the familiar broadcast, and absent were all the circuits of extra-planetary communication. Adam and Eve missed the contact they once had with any part of our local universe. Their counterparts had gone to worlds running along orderly, with a planetary Prince who had their worlds functioning well, and with an experienced staff ready to receive them and competent to work with during their early year's station on those worlds. But here on our planet, it was a different story. The Urantia rebellion changed everything. Our planetary Prince was very present, although shorn of most of his power; yet he still made Adam and Eve's task very difficult for them; he was the serpent in the Garden of Eden (Genesis 3:14).

They were very disillusioned. The Son and Daughter walked in the Garden on their first night under a beautiful full moon and discussed their situation for the next day. It was the end of Adam and Eve's first day on our strife-torn isolated planet, the confused planet of the Prince betrayal. They walked and talked way into the night of their first night on earth; they were very lonely. Their second day on earth, Adam and Eve were in session with the planetary receivers, the Melchizedeks, and their advisory council. From the Melchizedeks and their associates, Adam and Eve learned more about the particulars of the Caligastia rebellion and its resulting cataclysm upon our world's progress. overall, it was a

heartbreaking story. They learned about the lengthy details of mismanagement of our world affairs, and the facts concerning the collapse of the Caligastia scheme where he had attempted to accelerate the process of social evolution. They also reached a full realization of the stupidity of Caligastia trying to achieve planetary advancement without divine plans for that achievement. And that was the close of a sad, but an enlightening second day on our earth. These two, Son and Daughter of God, spent the whole of their third day inspecting the Garden of Eden, the most beautiful spot on earth. They were very pleased with what Van, Amadon and their staff had accomplished with their limited resources.

On the fourth day after Van and Amadon had everyone in Eden assemble at the inaugural mound, Adam addressed the people concerning their plans for the rehabilitation of our world. He outlined the course taken and the method they would use to rescue the low social state of our earth as the result of rebellion and sin. For Van and those that were assembling, this was a great day. The day closed with a feast for the council of men and women that were selected to take on responsibilities in the new administration of world affairs. Mind you, men, as well as women, were in this administration. Such a thing had not happened since the days of Dalamatia. It was an astounding sight to see Eve, a woman, participate in the honors and responsibilities of world affairs with a man. That ended the Higher Beings fourth day on earth, according to The Urantia Book.

The fifth day was spent organizing a temporary government. This administration was to function until the Melchizedek Receivers left earth. (The Melchizedek Receivers were sent to earth to take charge after the Caligastia rebellion).

The sixth day was consumed by the inspection of numerous types of humans and animals. Adam and Eve were escorted all day along the walls of Eden traveling in an easterly direction. They reached a better understanding of what had to be done to rid the planet of its state of confusion. They wanted to create a harmonious world amid a variety of living creatures. Those that accompanied the couple were surprised at how well Adam understood the thousands upon thousands of animals shown him. No sooner had Adam glanced upon an animal would he then indicate its nature and behavior. Adam would give names descriptive of the origin, nature, and function of all material creatures on sight. Those who directed his tour of inspection did not know the world's new rulers were some of the most expert anatomists of all Satania. Adam astonished those that accompanied him by describing a host of living things too small to be observed by the human eyes.

On the sixth day of their expedition being over, Adam and Eve rested for the first time in their new home, East of Eden, since being rematerialized on earth. The first six days of their exploration, they were kept very busy and looked forward to a day of rest, a day of freedom from all senses of duty. Adam, who had so intelligently discussed the animal life of Urantia and his unusual inaugural address, plus his charming manners, had won the hearts of the Garden dwellers. Not only did they accept the Son and Daughter wholeheartedly, but the majority was ready to fall and worship them as gods.

On the night of the sixth day, while Adam and Eve slept, strange things were happening in the vicinity of the Father Temple, the center of the Garden of Eden. There, under the crescent moon, hundreds of ardent and excited men and women listened for hours to their leaders' pleas. These leaders meant well, but they couldn't understand the simplicity and democratic manner of their new rulers. Long before daybreak that night, the temporary administrators of world affairs had decided that Adam and his mate were too modest. They concluded that divinity had come to earth, that Adam and Eve were gods, or so close to the god-state, that they were worthy of reverent worship. The events of the last six days had been too much for even the best of humans of that time. The action of the previous few days had their heads whirling. Therefore, they

proposed to bring the noble couple up to the Father Temple at high noon of the seventh day so that everyone could worship them and prostrate themselves in humble submission. The Garden dwellers were sincere in all of this.

Van vehemently objected to all that was taking place at the Father Temple. (Amadon oversaw the honor guards that remained behind with Adam and Eve.) His continuous protest was in vain as he was told that he was too modest himself and that he was not far from being a god himself; otherwise, how could he lived so long on earth, or how could he have brought forth a significant event such as the coming of Adam and Eve? The excited Edenites were about to seize him, to carry him to the mound of adoration. But he made his escape through the crowd, and being able to communicate with the midwayers, sent their leader in haste to fetch Adam. The midwayers are the ancient aliens I believe The History Channel has been searching for in their episodes of "Ancient Aliens."

It was around the dawn of the seventh day on our earth that Adam and Eve learned about the proposal of those well-meaning, but misguided mortals. The midwayers had transportation and were able to transport Adam and Eve swiftly to the Father Temple. (This is one of the reasons I believe the midwayers helped Adam and Eve's children to go from one continent to another years later.) That morning, from the mound of their so recent reception, Adam gave a detailed explanation of the divine order of sonship; he made it clear to the different people representing the many tribes that only the Father, and those whom he designates, may be worshiped.

It was a grand day just before noon; there was the arrival of a seraphic Messenger (a higher angel) bearing the Jerusem acknowledgment of the establishment of the world's rulers (they were in another dimension). As they moved away from the crowd, Adam pointed to the Father Temple and said: "Go now to the material emblem of the Father's invisible presence and bow to him who sustains us all. Let this act be a promise that you never will be tempted to worship anyone but God." All the people did as Adam commanded and began to worship our invisible Father. Adam and Eve stood alone on the mound with their heads bowed.

After that incident, always on the seventh day for many years, the mornings were devoted to physical improvement; midday was dedicated to spiritual worship and the afternoon devoted to mind culture and the evening was devoted to social rejoicing. This was not a law in Eden, but only a custom when Adam and Eve ruled on earth.

The Melchizedek Receivers remained on duty on our planet for seven years after the arrival of Adam and his mate. Although humans were not able to see the Melchizedeks, Adam and Eve had no trouble seeing them. It was now time for the Melchizedeks to turn duties of world affairs over to the Garden couple and for them to return to Jerusem. They took an entire day saying goodbye. That evening, the Melchizedeks gave the couple advice that was beneficial to them. Adam requested several times for his advisors to stay on earth. His request was denied. The time had come for the Material Son and Daughter to take full responsibility for world affairs. At midnight of the day, they were leaving; the seraphic transports of Satania left the earth destination Jerusem with 14 beings: 12 Melchizedeks, Van, and Amadon.

Things were going along quite well for the Garden couple, and it looked as though Adam would eventually have a plan for extending the Edenic civilization to other parts of the globe. He took the advice of the Melchizedeks and began to foster the arts of manufacture. He had in mind the development of trade relations with the outside world. When the Garden was at full capacity, there were over 100 primitive manufacturing plants in operation. There were extensive trade relations with nearby tribes. For many years, Adam and Eve instructed on how to deal with

uncivilized worlds; they were prepared for their specialized contribution to the advancements of evolutionary civilization. But now, they were face-to-face with the problems of establishing law and order to a world of savages, barbarians and semi-civilized human beings. Except for the cream of earth's population, there were very few people ready for the Adamic culture.

Adam made heroic attempts to establish a world government only to find his efforts were in vain. He met with stubborn resistance at every attempt; humanity at that stage was too crude. For example, Adam put into operation a system of group control throughout Eden, and he united all these companies into the Edenic League. But he had serious trouble when he tried to apply these ideas outside of the Garden of Eden with the remote tribes. The moment Adam's group decided to work outside the walls of the Garden of Eden, they met with direct resistance from Caligastia and Daligastia. (Yes, those two were still on the loose causing problems.) The fallen Prince was no longer world ruler, but he and his associate, Daligastia, had not been removed from the planet. (Caligastia is the original devil.) For many years, he and his group were in the background causing problems. Even today, if we allow them to influence us, they will affect our lives; Caligastia and his group were not taken off our planet with the rebel midwayers. Again, as mentioned earlier, the evilness of Caligastia has been greatly curtailed since the coming of Christ.

Adam and his crew had a difficult time trying to convince the primitive and crude minds of men and women of that era that there were invisible beings in another dimension interfering in whatever they tried to accomplish. But those primitives couldn't grasp invisible beings in other dimensions. Just look at how difficult it is for the average person today to believe that there are other dimensions and beings are occupying those dimensions. Also, in the Garden of Eden, Adam had problems with some of the confused minds leaning toward the teachings of Caligastia unbridled personal liberty theory. They caused many problems for Adam and his mate, interfering with plans for orderly, progressive, and substantial development. The Master of the Garden had to finally give up some of his more progressive ideas and revert to some of Van's old policies.

Therefore, he decided to divide the Edenites into companies of 100 with a captain over each and lieutenants over groups of 10. Adam and Eve preferred a representative government in place of monarchical rule, but they found no group ready for such an advanced government on the face of the earth. Again, Adam had to abandon all thoughts of representative government. But he did succeed in establishing about 100 outpost social trade centers where he had a firm, individual rule in his name. Van and his group had already established quite a few of the centers. Sending ambassadors from one tribe to another was from the time of Adam. This was a step forward in the evolution of government.

Home Life of Adam and Eve

The Adamic family grounds consisted of a little over five square miles. The home-site provided for more than 300,000 pure-line offspring of Adam and Eve, but only the first unit of the proposed buildings was ever constructed. Before the Adamic family outgrew that which was provided, the whole Edenic plan was disrupted, and the Garden was vacated.

The story of Adam and Eve is somewhat different in The Urantia Book, with which the average person is familiar. Therefore, I hope you, the reader, will bear with me. One must keep in mind that according to those Higher Beings, this story took place about 37,000 years ago. The way the story reached us in the Bible has changed as civilization has changed. For instance, in the Bible, it was assumed that Cain was Adam and Eve's oldest child, but not so, according to The Urantia Book.

Adamson was the first child of Adam and Eve in this story. Their second child was a girl; then, another son was born, Eveson. And this was the beginning of a new race of people, the Violet race. I am sure they were pretty much like the red and yellow races as far as color is concerned. Eve was the mother of five children, three girls and two boys before the Melchizedek Receivers left our planet. The Urantia Book, states that Eve had 63 children before the default: 32 daughters and 31 sons. The Edenic couple lived on our planet for over 500 years.

We must understand that Adam and Eve were superhuman beings, and they came to our planet as biological up-lifters. Since our humanity had reached its peak biologically, Adam and Eve's job was to improve humans, and they did to a limited degree; but, because they diverged from the divine plan, they brought discord into play, which we will discuss soon. By the time Adam and Eve left the Garden because of the default, their family consisted of four generations numbering 1,647 pure-line descendants. They had 42 children after they left the Garden, plus the two offspring they had with a mortal stock of the earth. It was the two offspring of mortal humans that caused the default of Adam and Eve and brought huge amounts of pain and sorrow to our human race.

Cooking was universally practiced outside the direct part of the Adamic sector of Eden; there was no cooking in Adam's household. Adam, Eve, and their children found their food fruits, nuts, and cereal ready prepared as they ripened. They ate once a day shortly after noontime. Adam and Eve also imbibed light energy from space emanating in conjunction with the substance from The Tree of Life.

The Edenic couple's bodies radiated a shimmer of light, but they always wore clothing to conform to the custom of their fellow Edenites. The origin of the halo encircling the heads of supposed saints and holy men and women dates to the days of Adam and Eve. Since the clothing, they wore obscured the glow radiating from their bodies, only the emanation from their heads was observable.

Adam, Eve, and their children could communicate with each other telepathically up to a distance of 50 miles. This thought exchange was due to a delicate gas chamber located close to the brain structures. With this object, they could receive and send thought vibrations, but this power was lost when the mind took up discord, disruption, and evilness.

The children of Adam and Eve attended their school in the "East of Eden," where they were intellectually taught according to the methods of the Jerusem schools until they were 16. The small children changed activities every half hour, the older children every hour. Here, the older children acted as teachers for, the younger children. It was indeed a new sight on earth to see the Adamic children at play joyful exciting activity just for the sheer fun of it. From 16 to the age of 20, they were taught at the Urantia School in the western end of the Garden of Eden where they served as teachers for the younger grade children of the surrounding tribes.

The purpose of the western school arrangement was socialization. The period before noon was devoted to horticulture and agriculture, afternoons to competitive play. The evenings were employed in social intercourse and the cultivation of personal friendships. Religion and sexual training were thought to be the parent's responsibility. The teaching in these schools included instruction regarding:

1. Health and care of the body.
2. The golden rule, the standard of social intercourse.
3. The relation of individual to group rights and community obligation.
4. History and culture of various human races.

5. Methods of advancing and improving human trade.
6. Co-ordination of conflicting duties and emotions.
7. The cultivation of play, humor and competitive substitutes for physical fighting.

The average age to become engaged for marriage was 18. At that time, the young people started a two-year course of instruction in preparation for marriage responsibilities, and at 21, they were eligible to get married. Adam and Eve always performed the marriage ceremonies of the first and second generations of their children. After getting married, the couple began their life's work.

Eden's moral laws were not much different from the seven commandments of Dalamatia. The Adamites expanded the reason for these commandments. An example is a command against murder. The indwelling Thought Adjuster or the God within was presented as one of the main reasons why one should not take another life. The Adamites taught that whosoever sheds the blood of another human, by a human should his/her blood be shed, for in God's image were humans made.

Worship for the public in the Garden was at noon and sunset was the hour for family worship. Those Higher Beings write that Adam did his best to discourage the practice of rote prayers. He taught those primitive races, for prayers to be effective, the prayers had to be personal. In other words, prayer without feeling was useless; it had to be the desire of the soul.

Adam's effort to get an ancient man to pray with feeling was in vain. The Edenites continued praying from prayers handed down to them from the time of Dalamatia. He also attempted to stop the blood sacrifice in religious ceremonies, for them to offer fruits as a substitute, but he made a little progress before the disruption of the Garden.

The teachers of the Garden also had a difficult time teaching sexual equality. The way Adam and his mate worked together had a profound effect on the Garden dwellers. Adam explained that women, as well as men, contributed equally to the factors that unite to form a new being. Before this lesson, people assumed that all procreation resided in the "loins of the father." They looked upon the mother as a means of nurturing the unborn and nursing the newborn. The more intelligent of the races on earth looked forward to the day they could intermarry with the superior children of the Violet race.

After reading this, I sat and pondered for a while, thinking what a different world this would be if those grand plans to biologically up-lift humanity by that superior race had been carried out. But even with the small amount of DNA of this imported race, we secured a tremendous amount of good for the evolutionary race of humankind.

The Legend of Creation

Many people in the distant past, and today as well, believe that God created the heavens and earth in six days, and on the seventh day, He rested. As time passed and humans became a little more sophisticated, someone must have thought six days was not enough time to bring all this creation into existence. Perhaps one day they saw the statement in the New Testament, II Peter 3:8: "But beloved be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the Lord as a thousand years and a thousand years is as one day." Seeing this statement, one could conclude that one of God's days is equal to a 1,000 of our years; so, if He created everything in six of His days that will equal 6,000 of our years, and on the seventh day He rested. That's another 1,000 years: all total, 7,000 years.

The conclusion is the earth is a little over 7,000 years old. But this was a figure of speech; the writer could have just as well said a billion years is like a day to God. In other words, there is no such thing as time to God. According to those Higher Beings, the whole story of God creating everything in six days and the seventh day He rested, is based on the tradition that Adam and Eve spent six days in their initial survey of the Garden of Eden and on the seventh day they rested. Because of the circumstances, the period of a week became almost a sacred sanction. (The Dalamatian initially introduced the week.) Adam, having spent six days inspecting the Garden and plans for the organization of humanity was not prearranged; it was all worked out day by day. In The Urantia Book, those Higher Beings write: [74:8.2] *The legend of creating the world in six days was an afterthought, in fact, more than thirty thousand years afterward.* ³

Today's scientists claim our universe is around 13.7 billion years old, a vast discrepancy between 7 thousand and billions of years. How can people continue to believe this story that our planet is a little over 7 thousand years old, with all the evidence we have available today? Not only the universe but also our planet is over several billion years old, according to earth's scientists.

The Default of Adam and Eve

After being on our planet for 100 years, Adam saw very little progress outside of the Garden of Eden. The reality of race improvement appeared to be a long way off. Their situation was so desperate it seemed to demand something other than the original plans. It often passed through Adam's mind, and he expressed these many times to Eve. Adam and Eve were loyal, but they were isolated from their kind; they were also distressed by the sorry condition of our planet.

Under normal circumstances, the first objective of planetary Adam and Eve would be the purging and blending of the races. On our planet, such a task seemed hopeless. Although biologically fit, the races on Urantia never purged of their retarded or defective strains, which was the work of the prince and his staff. The rebellion caused many difficult problems for our human race. Adam and Eve found themselves in an unprepared world for the proclamation of humankind brotherhood. Our world at that time was at its lowest point of spiritual darkness and the curse of rebellion. No, Adam and Eve had ever set down in a more difficult world. The obstacles seemed insurmountable. But the early leaving off the Melchizedek Receivers made their situation worse. Only indirectly, using an angelic order, were they allowed to communicate with any being outside of our planet. Slowly, their courage began to drain, and they were all but exhausted. The Higher Being that presented these papers had this to say:

[75:1.6] *Probably no Material Sons of Nebadon was ever faced with a complicated and seemingly hopeless task as confronted Adam and Eve in the sorry plight of Urantia. But they would have sometime met with success had they been more farseeing and patient. Both especially Eve, were altogether too impatient; they were not willing to settle down to the long, long endurance test. They wanted to see some immediate results, and they did, but the results they secured proved most disastrous both to themselves and their world.* ⁴

Caligastia plot

Caligastia, the original snake in the Garden of Eden, frequently visited the Garden and had many conversations with Adam and Eve, but they were unyielding to his suggestion of compromise. Caligastia tried everything to win over Adam and his mate. But Adam and Eve had seen

enough of the results of the rebellion to be immune against any of Caligastia proposals. Daligastia attempts to influence Adam and Eve's children were also unsuccessful. Neither Caligastia nor his associate had any power to force an individual to do anything against his/her will.

Before the time of the coming of Christ, Caligastia was still the planetary Prince, but in name only. He wasn't stripped of his title until the resurrection of Christ when Christ won the right to be sovereign of Nebadon (our local universe). That is also the time Christ kicked Lucifer out of the heaven-world or his high state.

The fallen Prince Caligastia was determined to disrupt the work of Adam and Eve. He soon gave up on Adam and decided to try a wily attack on Eve. The evil one knew that his plan had to be clever if he hoped to deceive the mother of the Violet race. So, Caligastia contrived to entrap Eve by using a person of the loftier status of Nodite group, a descendant of his former corporeal staff named Nod, who became the leader of the Caligastia 100 that rebelled.

It was the farthest thing from Eve's mind to do anything to jeopardize Adam's plan. The Melchizedeks, knowing a woman's inclination to look for immediate results rather than plan for future effects, warned Eve before they departed of the danger they faced on this isolated planet. She was never to stray from her mate's side not to attempt any personal or secret methods for furthering their mutual cause. Eve had honestly carried out those plans for 100 years, and it never occurred to her that any danger was attached to the private meetings she was enjoying with one of the Nodites named Serapatatia. The whole affair developed so gradually and naturally; she was taken unaware. The Garden dwellers were in touch with the Nodites since the early days of the Garden of Eden. These mixed Nodites, descendants of rebellious members of the Caligastia staff, received a great deal of help from the Garden dwellers. Now, through them, the dwellers of the Garden were about to meet their complete undoing and final downfall.

The Temptation of Eve

Adam and his mate were finishing their first 100 years on our planet as the planet rulers when Serapatatia, upon the death of his father, came into leadership of the western or Syrian confederation of the Nodite tribes. Serapatatia was a brown-tinted man, a brilliant descendant of the one-time chief of the Dalamatia commission on health, who had mated with one of the superior females of the blue race of those distant days. All through the ages, the Blue race held power and wielded considerable influence among the western Nodite tribes.

Serapatatia made several visits to the Garden, and he much admired the righteousness of Adam's cause. Soon after taking over the leadership of the Syrian Nodites, Serapatatia announced his desire to establish and join the work of Adam and Eve in the Garden. Most of his people joined him in this program, and Adam was elated at the news that the most powerful and most intelligent of the neighboring tribes would be joining him in his plan of world improvement. Not long after this, Serapatatia and his staff were invited to a party given by Adam and Eve in their own home. Serapatatia soon became the most efficient of all Adam's lieutenants, honest and sincere in all his endeavors. Serapatatia was never aware, though, not even later, that he was used as a tool by the crafty Caligastia.

At this juncture, I would like to quote and give the reader a bird's eye view and the cause of the default in the Garden of Eden:

[75:3.6] *It should again be emphasized that Serapatatia was altogether honest and wholly sincere in all that he proposed. He never once suspected that he was playing into the hands of Caligastia and Daligastia. Serapatatia was entirely loyal to the plan of building up a strong reserve*

of the Violet race before the worldwide, up stepping of the confused people of Urantia. But this would require hundreds of years to consummate, and he was impatient; he wanted to see immediate results-something in his own lifetime. He made it clear to Eve that Adam was oftentimes discouraged by the little that had been accomplished toward uplifting the world.

For more than five years, Serapatatia advanced his plans; finally, they were developed to where Eve would consent to have a secret meeting with Cano. Accordingly, he was the most intelligent and active leader of the nearby tribes of friendly Nodite. Cano was very much in agreement with Adam and Eve's policies. He was one of the sincerest spiritual leaders neighboring Nodite who favored friendly relation with the members of the Garden. ⁵

The meeting took place one evening in autumn around twilight. It wasn't too far from Adam and Eve's home. Eve had never met the handsome and enthusiastic Cano. He was a magnificent specimen of superior physique and outstanding intellect of his ancient ancestors of the prince's staff. Cano also believed in the good work that Serapatatia was doing. Outside the Garden, multiple mating was a common practice. Flattery and persuasion influenced Eve. She consented to their much-discussed plans and added her little scheme of world saving to the more significant and more far-reaching divine plan.

Before Eve knew what was going on, the fatal step had taken place; Eve had sex with Cano. The decision that Eve had made at that moment caused our human race to suffer beyond words. She had aborted the plans that the Divine Beings laid out for our earth. Because of her decision, we now lingered far behind in our evolution. Some of us are still wobbling in a semi-state of consciousness. As so-called civilized humans, we do not yet understand our reason for being.

Continuing, the celestial beings that were stationed on our planet at that time were stirring; Adam realized something was amiss, he asked Eve to come aside with him in the Garden. For the first time, Adam heard about the long-nourished plan for accelerating world improvement. Eve and her conspirators felt they could improve on the divine plan. Eve, in accepting the suggestion of Serpatatia, the divine plans for our planet were shattered. The humans of that long ago period in history were now without a divine plan. This was the curse of humanity. We were denied complete biological up lifting and spiritual guidance. With the help of the Tree of Life, Adam and Eve were destined to live even until our time, helping to prepare us for those mansion worlds on higher dimensions. Here, I think it would be appropriate if I quote this section of The Urantia Book:

[75:4.2] And as the Material Son and Daughter thus communed in the moonlit Garden, "the voice in the Garden" reproved them for disobedience. And that voice was none other than my own announcement to the Edenic pair that they had transgressed the Garden covenant; that they had disobeyed the instructions of the Melchizedeks; that they had defaulted in the execution of their oaths of trust to the sovereign of the universe.

Eve had consented to participate in the practice of good and evil. Good is the carrying out of the divine plans; sin is a deliberate transgression of the divine will; evil is the misadaptation of plans and the maladjustment of techniques resulting in universe disharmony and planetary confusion.

Every time the Garden pair had partaken of the fruit of the Tree of Life, they had been warned by the archangel custodian to refrain from yielding to the suggestions of Caligastia to combine good and evil. They had been thus admonished: "In the day that you commingle good and evil, you shall surely become as the mortals of the realm; you shall surely die." 6

Eve's disappointment was pathetic; Adam analyzed their predicament. Although he was heartbroken and felt dejected, he had only pity for his mate. Despondent over the realization of failure, Adam sought out Laotta, the brilliant Nodite woman who was head of the western schools of the Garden. Adam, with premeditation, committed the "sin" of Eve. He deliberately chose the same fate as Eve: he had sex with Laotta. He sincerely loved his mate with a super-mortal affection and thinking of the possibility of being here alone on earth, he knew likely Eve would have to return to the higher worlds to await her fate. I believe Adam surmised that by committing the same transgression, his fate would be the same as Eve's. His conjecture was correct; they both had to remain on our planet until their dying days.

An incident with a woman name Laotta in the Garden of Eden is what I believe started the rumor that Adam had a first wife named Lilith. Lilith dark origin began in Babylonian demonology and recognized by Hittites, Egyptians, Israelites, and Greeks. She reappeared in the Jewish Midrashim literature in the Middle age as Adam's first wife; some say this was between 400 AD and 1200 AD. I believe this was when the Jews realized they had two creations of man in the Bible (Genesis 1-27) and (Genesis 2:21) which they tried to remedy. From that point on, Adam and Eve were as the mortals of that time. They were no longer allowed to partake of the Tree of Life and would eventually die. They lived on our planet over 500 years, yet like any other mortal from our planet, they had to experience the mansion worlds of which Jesus spoke.

The voice in the Garden that came down to us as God talking to Adam and Eve, I believe, is untrue. God does not speak to anyone in the way we received the information. The seraphic angel that presented this paper, 75, said it was she that spoke to Adam and Eve in the Garden. Her name is Solonia.

Eve told Cano of their often-repeated warning that if anyone disrupted the divine plans would surely die. Cano, not understanding the significance of the warning, assured her that man and woman with good motives and right intention could do no evil; that she would live anew in their offspring who would grow up blessed and stabilize the world. However, although Eve and her conspirators had good intentions, with a sincere desire to help the world, it constituted evil because they departed from the divine plan. It was the wrong way to achieve righteousness. Solonia, the seraph in the Garden, had this to say:

[75:4.8] I talked to the father and mother of the Violet race that night in the Garden as it become my duty under such sorrowful circumstances. I listened fully to the recital of all that led up to the default of Mother Eve and gave both of them advice and counsel concerning the immediate situation. Some of this advice they followed; some they disregarded. This conference appears in your record as the Lord calling to Adam and Eve in the Garden and asking, "Where are you?" It was the practice of later generations to attribute everything unusual and extraordinary whether natural or spiritual, directly to the personal intervention of the Gods. 7

When the inhabitants of the Garden found out what happened to Eve, they became infuriated and unmanageable, declaring war on the nearby Nodite's settlement. They rushed out of the gates and attacked the unprepared Nodites destroying them. Not a man, woman, or child was spared. Cano, the father of the unborn Cain, also perished. Serapatatia, after realizing what had happened, was full of remorse and fear. The

next day after the attack, he went down to the great river, and he drowned himself. The children of Adam tried to comfort their distraught mother, while their father wandered off in solitude for 30 days. During that time, he composed himself, returned home and began to make plans for their future course of action.

It is sad that innocent children often share the results of mistakes of misguided parents. Those noble sons and daughters of Adam and Eve were overwhelmed by their unexplainable sorrow and unbelievable tragedy that had been suddenly and ruthlessly thrust upon them. It took over 50 years for the older children to recover from the sadness and grief of those tragic days, especially the 30 days their father was away. They were completely unaware of his whereabouts or fate. Quoting the Higher Being that presented these papers:

*[75:5.7] And those same thirty days were as long years of sorrow and suffering for Eve. Never did this noble soul fully recover from the effects of that excruciating period of mental suffering and spiritual sorrow. No feature of their subsequent deprivations and material hardships ever began to compare in Eve's memory with these terrible days and awful nights of loneliness and unbearable uncertainty. She learned of the rash act of Serapatatia and did not know whether her mate had in sorrow destroyed himself or had been removed from the world for retribution for her misstep. And when Adam returned, Eve experienced a satisfaction of joy and gratitude that never was effaced by their long and difficult life partnership of toiling service.*⁸

Time was passing, and Adam was not aware of the nature of their offense until around 70 days after the default of Eve. The Melchizedeks returned to Urantia to take jurisdiction of world affairs; Adam now knew that they had failed. But there was more trouble brewing: the story of the annihilation of the Nodite tribe near Eden traveled fast, reaching the home tribe of Serapatatia to the north of the Garden. Within a short time, a vast army was assembled to march on Eden. Adam, Eve, and their offspring were forced to leave the first Garden and migrate to what was called the second Garden in the Euphrates Valley. There was intense and prolonged enmity between the man and the woman, between his seed and her seed. (That was between the Adamites and the Nodites.) Genesis 3:15: "And I will put enmity between thee and the woman between thy seed and her seed."

From that time forward, there always seemed to be some bickering in the Middle East. They have never had a peaceful situation that lasted any amount of time. The land appears cursed since the time of Adam and Eve. But with the knowledge we have today, this seeming curse can be alleviated if each would take personal responsibility to make a shift in his/her attitude towards life.

Continuing, after Adam learned that the Nodites were on the march, he attempted to enlist the help of the Melchizedeks, but to no avail. They told him to do what he thought was best. They promised him their friendly co-operation as far as possible in whatever course he decided upon, the Melchizedeks were forbidden to interfere with the personal plans of Adam and Eve.

Adam had no tolerance for war and decided to leave the first Garden to the Nodites unopposed. On the third day of their journey, the Edenic caravan stopped with the arrival of the seraphic transports from Jerusem. The same type of carriages that brought Adam and Eve to our planet, these transports are known in the higher worlds to travel thousands of miles per second. This was the first time Adam and his mate were told what would happen to their children as the transports stood by. The children who had reached the age where they could make their own decision (age 20) in this matter, were given a choice to stay on Urantia with their parents or to become the ward of the Most Highs of Norlatiadek

(the constellation to which our world belongs). Two-thirds of the group chose to go to Edentia and one-third elected to stay with their parents. All the children under 20 years old were taken to Edentia. Whoever witnesses the sorrowful parting of the Material Son, and Daughter and their children realize that the way of the transgressors is difficult. The people in caravans were very sad as they continues their journey. How could anything be more tragic? Adam and Eve came to our planet with high hopes, they were forced to leave the Garden of Eden in disgrace and separated from most of their children.

While the Edenic caravan stopped for the transport seraphim, Adam and Eve were told of the nature of their transgressions; they were advised concerning their fate. Gabriel appeared on our planet to announce their judgment. The verdict; both Adam and Eve found in default; they violated the covenant of their trust as rulers of our planet. But while burdened with the feeling of guilt, Adam and his mate were happy they were not found guilty of rebellion. The Edenic couple was told by Solonia, the seraphim in the Garden before Adam and Eve left Jerusem, and their instructor had fully explained to them the results of any departure from the divine plans. The angel Solonia said she warned the Edenic couple repeatedly of the consequences of any divergence. Solonia continues: [75:7.5] *Adam and Eve, like their fellows on Jerusem, maintained immortal status through intellectual association with the mind-gravity circuit of the Spirit. When this vital sustenance is broken by mental disjunction, then, regardless of the spiritual level of creature existence, immortality status is lost. Mortal status followed by physical dissolution was the inevitable consequence of the intellectual default of Adam and Eve.* ⁹

Adam and Eve now fell from their high estate of Material Son and Daughter of God down to the lowly status of a human, but that was not the fall of humans. Humanity uplifted despite the immediate consequences of Adam and Eve defaults. Although the divine plans for the Violet race miscarried, we still benefited tremendously from the contribution of Adam, his mate and their children who decided to stay behind with their parents. We need to stop and count our blessings and imagine what life on our planet would have been like without their contributions. There has been no “fall of man.” The history of humanity has been that of progressive evolution. Although Adam, Eve and their children left our world improved, they were not perfect; otherwise, they would not have been able to sin. All things are in a state of change, but it all depends on what level one begins. If every being started at the same level, this would no doubt be a sorry universe. At the end of this paper, paper 75, Solonia, the Seraphim, writes:

[75:8.7] *If this were only a mechanistic universe, if the First Great Source and center were only a force and not a personality, if all creation were a vast aggregation of physical matter dominated by precise laws characterized by unvarying energy action, then might perfection obtain, even despite the incompleteness of universe status. There would be no disagreement; there would be no friction. But in our evolving universe of relative perfection and imperfection, we rejoice that disagreement and misunderstanding are possible, for thereby is evidence the fact and the act of personality in the universe. And if our creation is an existence domination by a personality, then can you be assured of the possibilities of personality survival, advancement, and achievement; we can be confident of personality growth, experience, and adventure. What a glorious universe in that it is personal and progressive, not merely mechanical or even passively perfect.* ¹⁰

Chapter 6

The Second Garden

When Adam decided to leave the first Garden without opposition, he and his followers could not go west as the Edenites had no boats to take on such an adventure. They couldn't go north because the Nodites were already on the march toward Eden. They were afraid to go south because the hill areas were saturated with hostile tribes. Their only option was to go east. Adam and his followers took the road eastward, a more pleasant region between the Tigris and Euphrates Rivers.

Both Cain and Sansa were born before the Adamic caravan reached their new home between the rivers in Mesopotamia. Laotta, the mother of Sansa, died giving birth to her daughter, Eve, who suffered a great deal but survived due to her superior strength. Eve took Sansa, the child of Laotta, and raised her as her child along with Cain. Sansa grew up to be a beautiful woman with exceptional abilities. She married Sargan, who ruled the northern blue race and she contributed to the advancement of that race as well.

It took the Adamic caravan almost a year to reach the Euphrates River, and they found it at flood tide. Adam and his group camped on the plains of the Euphrates for around six weeks before they reached the land between the rivers, which was to become their second Garden. When word reached the tribes that occupied the area where the second Garden was to be, and that the king and high priest were marching on them, they swiftly fled to the eastern mountains. When Adam and company reached the land of desire, they found all the territory vacated. Adam and his workers began the work of building their new homes and established a new center of culture and religion. Ironically, this site was one of the original three places that were proposed by the committee assigned by Van and Amadon to be the site for the first garden. The two rivers were good natural defenses against invaders in those days. A short distance north of the second Garden, the Euphrates, and the Tigris came close together; and there, they built a defense wall extending 56 miles for the protection of the territory to the south of the garden and between the rivers.

After settling in the new garden, the dwellers had to adapt to crude methods of living. The ground seemed as though its been cursed. Nature was taking its course. The Adamites were forced to wrest a living from the unprepared soil, and they had to deal with the realities of life. The first Garden partially prepared for them, but they had to create the second Garden out of the "sweat of their brow." Mentioned in the Bible.

Cain and Abel

Abel was born less than two years after Cain. Abel was the first of Adam and Eve's children born in the second garden, and when Abel reached the age of 12, he decided he wanted to be a herder, while Cain selected agriculture as his vocation. In those days, it was the custom to give offerings to the priesthood the things one had to offer. Herders would give of their flock, while farmers gave the fruits of the land; and as was the custom, Cain and Abel gave periodically. The two boys had many arguments about who had the best vocation. Abel noted preference

shown for his animal sacrifice. In the first garden, it was the fruit of the fields that the priests reckoned more important in comparing to the animal. But tradition had now changed. I would imagine that in the first garden, people were more interested in becoming vegetarians because Adam and Eve were but after many years, things had changed.

Cain tried to rekindle the fruits as a more important sacrifice, but his efforts were in vain, and his younger brother taunted him about it. In the days of the first garden, Adam tried to discourage the offering of animal sacrifice, and Cain had a legitimate argument. It was, however, difficult to organize the religious life in the Second Garden. Adam overburdened with a thousand other things about the work of building homes, defense and agriculture, so he left the spiritual matters of the garden up to the Nodites priests who served in this capacity in the first Garden. In such a short time, those Nodites priests were reverting to the rules of pre-Adamic times.

Cain and Abel never got along, and the situation with the animal sacrifice further contributed to their hatred of each other. Abel knew he was the son of both Adam and Eve, and always teased Cain that Adam was not his father. Cain was not wholly of the Violet race, as his father was of the Nodites race that later mixed with the Blue, and Redman and with the original Andonic stock. Cain had inherited a pugnacious attitude, which caused him to nourish an increasing hatred for his younger brother. One day, when Abel was 18 and Cain was 20, Abel, (ridiculing of his brother Cain, so infuriated Cain he turned on Abel and slew him.)

Adam and Eve knew something was wrong with Abel when his dogs brought the stock home without their master. After Adam and Eve had found out what had happened to their son Abel, and what Cain had done, it reminded them of their folly, and they encouraged Cain in his decision to leave the garden.

Cain's life in Mesopotamia was not an easy one since he was in a way symbolic of the default. It was not that the people in his environment were unkind to him, but he was somehow aware of their unconscious resentment of him. Cain knew that if he left the garden since he had no tribal markings, the neighboring tribesmen that saw him would try to kill him, so he had a mark placed on his forehead, and later fear and some remorse led him to repent. Somehow, Cain reached the land of Nod east of the second Eden. (Genesis 4:8-17,) of the Bible, states:

"And Cain talked with Able his brother: and it came to pass when they were in the field, that Cain rose up against Able his brother and slew him. And the Lord said unto Cain, where is Able thy brother? And he said, I know not: Am I my brother's keeper? And he said, what hast thou done? The voice of thy brother's blood crieth unto me from the ground. And now art thou cursed from the earth, which hath opened her mouth to receive thy brother's blood from thy hand.

When thou tillest the ground, it shall not henceforth yield unto thee her strength; a fugitive and a vagabond shalt thou be in the earth. And Cain said unto the Lord, my punishment is greater than I can bear. Behold, thou hast driven me out this day from the face of the earth; and from thy face shall be hid; and I shall be a fugitive and a vagabond in the earth; and it shall come to pass, that every one that findeth me shall slay me. And the Lord said unto him, therefore whosoever slayeth Cain vengeance shall be taken on him sevenfold. And the Lord set a mark upon Cain, lest any finding him should kill him.

And Cain went out from the presence of the Lord, and dwelt in the land of Nod, on the east of Eden. And Cain knew his wife; and she conceived, and bare Enoch: and he built a city, and called the name of the city, after the name of his son, Enoch."

Today we all know that God doesn't mark anyone's forehead, or we should know. I'm confident it was Adam that expelled Cain from the Garden of Eden and marked his forehead. The original cuneiforms wordings were perhaps the lord of the garden or the god of the garden said so and so, however, the Jewish religion does not allow any of their members to call anyone lord or god, but the Lord God Almighty.

The Urantia Book states that Cain became very popular with one group of his father's people and became a great leader. He promoted peace between his division of the Nodites and the Adamites all his life. Cain married Romonia, one of his distant cousins, and their first son, Enoch, became the leader of the Elamites Nodites, and for hundreds of years the Elamites and the Adamites continued to be at peace, and it seems that Serapatatia's dream had come true after all.

The Bible claims Adam and Eve were the first two people on earth, and Cain and Able their first two children. Genesis 4:16 say that after Cain had killed Abel, he went to the land of Nod. The next verse, 17, says that Cain knew his wife and she conceived their first child, a son they named Enoch. But the Bible never mentions where Cain's wife originated. Was she already in the land of Nod? Whose daughter, was she? There seem to be statements in the Bible that makes one feel as though someone is trying to hide something, and at the same time revealing all. Another strange thing about the Bible is that it never mentioned that Adam and Eve had any daughters until Adam was 800 years old (Genesis 5:4).

Life in Mesopotamia

As the days and months passed in the second garden, the results of the default were taking its toll on the dwellers. Adam and Eve missed the comfort, beauty, and serenity of the first garden. They also missed their children who had been sent to Edentia. It was distressing to see those once glorious beings reduced to the ordinary flesh of the earth, but they bore their degraded status with grace and courage. Adam spent a great deal of his time in training his children and their associates in civil administration, educational methods, and religious devotion. Ironically, if Adam had not taken this precaution, all hell would have broken loose following his demise. Long before Adam and Eva's death, they had noticed that their children and followers had gradually forgotten their glory in the Garden of Eden.

The rulers of the Adamites were taken hereditarily from the sons of the first garden. Adam's first son, Adamson, founded a secondary center of the Violet race to the north of the second garden. His second son, Eveson, became a great leader and administrator, and he was a tremendous help to his father. He did not live as long as Adam, and his eldest son, Jansad, became the successor of Adam as the head of the Adamite tribes.

Seth was the oldest living son born in the second Garden. The priesthood rulers originated with Seth, and he was their first ruler. Seth became very interested in improving the religious status of his father's people. The Sethite priesthood had a threefold purpose: religion, health, and education. The priests of this order were trained to preside over religious ceremonies, to practice as physicians, sanitary inspectors and to act as teachers in the second Garden.

Adam, his family, and followers, had brought hundreds of seeds, buds, plants, and cereals to the second garden from the first Garden. They also took along with them hundreds of herds and domesticated animals. Because of this foresight, they had a significant advantage over the tribe that surrounded them, so they enjoyed many benefits of the first garden. The Adamites far exceeded the surrounding tribes in culture advancements and intellectual development. The dwellers of the second Garden even had their alphabet, and they laid the foundations for much

of what we enjoy today as modern science, art, and literature. In the land between the Euphrates and the Tigris rivers many years ago, they practiced the craft of writing, metalworking, pottery making and weaving. And they had a system of architecture that was not surpassed for thousands of years. This is the reason some people were far in advance of evolutionary people.

The dwellings of the Violet race were ideal for the times. The children took courses of training in agriculture, craftsmanship and animal husbandry, or they were trained to take on the threefold duty of a Sethite priest. Today, when we think of the priesthood, it is a mockery. Higher Beings say when we think of the Sethite ministry, do not confuse those noble and high-minded teachers of health, religion, and true educators of the second Garden with the debased and commercial priests of the later surrounding nations. The Sethite religious concepts of God and the universe were more or less accurate. The healthcare for their times was excellent, and their methods of education have never been surpassed.

The spiritual, as well as the physical vision of Adam and Eve, were far more advanced than the surrounding tribes, even to our modern-day understanding. Their senses were much more acute than present-day humanity. They were able to see the midwayers, angelic hosts, Melchizedeks as well as the fallen Prince Caligastia, who visited them several times. They were able to see those celestial beings over 100 years after the default. These special senses were not as prevalent in their offspring, however, and with each passing generation, it diminished. The superior children of Adam and Eve were not as susceptible to fear as the evolutionary races of our planet. So much fear persists in our present-day races because our ancestors received so little of Adam's life plasma due to the early miscarriage of the divine plans for the physical uplift of our humanity. Also, the cells in the body of Adam and Eve's children were much more resistant to diseases than evolutionary creatures indigenous to our earth.

Continuing, after they were established in the second Garden, Adam discussed with Eve the problems of spreading more of his life plasma among the evolutionary races. Adam and Eve are considered the founders of the Violet race of man, the ninth race. Therefore, Adam decided to leave behind as much of his life plasma as possible to benefit humanity after his death. They agreed for Eve to head a commission of 12 on race improvement, and before Adam died, this commission had chosen 1,682 of the highest types of women on earth, and these women were impregnated with the Adamic life plasma. However, The Urantia Book does not say how they were fertilized. I am sure Adam didn't go to bed with all those women they no doubt had some scientific method of impregnating those women, just as the scientists today. This is the reason the UFO researchers and linguistics interpreted that part of the Epic of Gilgamesh as extraterrestrials creating new species, humans. But it was Adam and Eve trying to do all they could do to uplift the genes of humanity. After thousands of years, this information was significantly distorted. All except 112 of the children reached maturity, so the world benefited from an additional 1,570 superior men and women.

Although these segregated mothers were selected from all the surrounding tribes and represented most of the races on earth, the majority was chosen from the highest strains of the Nodites; their descendants were the beginning of the Andite race who were the ancestors of the Aryan Race. These children were born and reared in the tribal surroundings of their respective mothers. The Aryan race was a very advanced race—the ones Hitler was looking for and claimed the Germans were their descendants; but as you can see, they were made up of different races and today they are all over the world.

Death of Adam and Eve

[76:5.1] Not long after the establishment of the second Eden, Adam and Eve were duly informed that their repentance was acceptable, and that, while they were doomed to suffer the fate of the mortals of their world, they should certainly become eligible for admission to the ranks of the sleeping survivors of Urantia. They fully believed this gospel of resurrection and rehabilitation which the Melchizedeks so touchingly proclaimed to them. Their transgression had been an error of judgment and not the sin of conscious and deliberate rebellion.

Adam and Eve did not, as citizens of Jerusem, have Thought Adjusters, nor were they Adjuster indwelt when they functioned on Urantia in the first garden. But shortly after their reduction to mortal status, they became conscious of a new presence within them and awakened to the realization that human status coupled with sincere repentance had made it possible for Adjusters to indwell them. It was this knowledge of being Adjuster indwelt that greatly heartened Adam and Eve throughout the remainder of their lives; they knew that they had failed as Material Sons of Satania, but they also knew that the Paradise career was still open to them as ascending sons of the universe.

Adam knew about the dispensational resurrection which occurred simultaneously with his arrival on the planet, and he believed that he and his companion would probably be repersonalized in connection with the advent of the next order of sonship. He did not know that Michael, the sovereign of this universe, was so soon to appear on Urantia; he expected that the next Son to arrive would be of the Avonal order. Even so, it was always a comfort to Adam and Eve, as well as something difficult for them to understand, to ponder the only personal message they ever received from Michael. This message, among other expressions of friendship and comfort, said: "I have given consideration to the circumstances of your default, I have remembered the desire of your hearts ever to be loyal to my Father's will, and you will be called from time. 'race of mortal slumber when I come to Urantia if the subordinate Sons of my realm do not send for you before that time. '¹

The words of Lord Michael were a great mystery to Adam and Eve, they understood a possible unique resurrection in Lord Michael's message, which excited them and brought joy to their lonely souls. But they could not grasp the statement that they may rest until the time of resurrection in conjunction with Michael's appearance on earth as Christ. And so Adam and Eve always professed that a Son of God would come and they announced to their loved ones that hope that the world of their blunders and sorrows may be the chosen realm of the ruler of this universe to function as the Paradise Bestowal Son. (A Paradise Bestowal Son is one of the Higher Creator Sons of God who selects a world as one of the seven initiation stages they must experience.) It sounded too good to be true, but Adam thought this strife-torn earth might turn out, after all, to be the most envious world in our local universe. Adam and Eve's descendants for thousands of years went all over the globe preaching of the coming of Christ. That's the reason you see images of the woman and baby in her arm in places like Egypt and other cultures long before Jesus appeared, it was saying that a son of God would be born of a woman.

It's written in The Urantia Book that Adam lived 530 years on our earth and died of old age when his physical body wore out. Eve had died 19 years earlier of a weakened heart. They were both buried in the center of divine service that had been built to their specifications soon after the walls of the garden had been completed. The origin of the practice of burying noted and important men and women under the floor of the

place of worship. It's obvious after Adam and Eve death their descendants would say they were the first parents, and they were for that first generation of their children. But after thousands of years, they became the first parents of all humanity, and our evolutionary ancestors didn't know any better, they accepted it.

Survival of Adam and Eve

Adam and Eve went to their mortal rest with strong faith in the promise made to them by the Melchizedeks that they would sometime awake from the sleep of death to resume life on the mansion worlds, all so familiar to them in the days preceding their mission in the material flesh of the Violet race on Urantia.

They did not long rest in the oblivion of the unconscious of the mortal of the realm. On the third day after Adam's death, the second after his reverent burial, the order of Lanaforge, sustained by the acting Most High of Edentia and concurred in by the Union of Days on Salvington, acting for Michael, were placed in Gabriel's hands directing the special roll call of the distinguished survivors of the Adam default on Urantia. And in accordance with this mandate of special resurrection number twenty-six of the Urantia series, Adam and Eve were depersonalized and reassembled in the resurrection halls of the mansion worlds of Satantia together with 1,316 of their associates in the experience of the first garden. Many other loyal souls had already been translated at the time of Adam's arrival, which attended by a dispensational adjudication of both the sleeping survivors and of the living qualified ascenders. ²

It didn't take long for Adam and Eve to pass through the worlds of progressive Ascension (the mansion worlds) until they attained citizenship of Jerusem, the planet of their origin, but this time, as a member of a different order of universe personalities. They left Jerusem as permanent citizen Son and Daughter of God. They returned as ascendant citizen Son and Daughter of Man. They were attached to the Urantia service of the system capital (Jerusem) where they were assigned membership among the four and 20 counselors who made up the advisory controlled body of Urantia (earth.) This is the four-and 20 elders in Revelation 4:4 who John saw sitting on the throne. Thus, ends the story of Adam and Eve on our planet. Summing it all up, Adam and Eve contributed significantly to speeding up civilization and the accelerated biologic progress of the human races. They left a high culture on earth, but it was not possible for such a civilization to continue with early dilution and the eventual submergence of the Adamic inheritance.

When Adam's plans went astray, he, his family and followers had to leave the first Garden of Eden and were not allowed to take away the core of the Tree of Life. When the Nodites invaded the Garden, they were told if they ate of the tree, they would become as "gods." To their surprise, they found the tree unguarded. They ate freely of the fruits of the tree for years, but it did nothing for them. They were mortal of the realm, and they did not have the endowment, which acted as a complement to the Tree of Life. They became enraged when they found they were not benefiting from the tree, and in connection with one of their internal wars, both the tree and the temple of the Eternal Father were destroyed by fire.

After Adam, Eve, their children, and followers left the first garden, the Nodites, Cutites and the Sunties occupied it. Later, it became the dwelling place of the northern Nodites that was against cooperation with the Adamites. These low-grade Nodites held control of the peninsula for almost 4,000 years after Adam had left the garden. In conjunction with the violent activity of the surrounding volcanoes and the submergence

of the Sicilian land to Africa, the eastern end of the Mediterranean Sea sank bringing down the whole of the Edenic peninsula beneath the waters. With this vast submergence of the coastline, the eastern Mediterranean was significantly elevated. This was the end of the most beautiful natural creation earth had ever known, but the sinking was not sudden. It took several hundred years to submerge the entire peninsula completely and the Garden of Eden was no more.

The Mansion Worlds

Upon completion of this chapter, my immediate goal is to give a little information about the mansion worlds Adam and Eve had to experience. When Jesus was on our planet, he mentioned the many mansions in his Father's house. For him to mention them, they must have been of some importance. I didn't realize how important they are at our present stage of evolution until I read The Urantia Book. "In my Father's house there are many mansions, if it were not so I would have told you, I go to prepare a place for you." John 14:2. Jesus knew all about this place and was going to make sure everything was alright with our experience there. Before reading The Urantia Book, whenever I heard about the death of a small child or baby, I wondered what happened to the essence of that baby or child. After reading about the subject in The Urantia Book, I was relieved.

The Higher Ones call the sphere the young children and babies go to The Probationary Nursery. These infant receiving schools are devoted to the nurture and training of the children of time. Angels deliver the children the Higher Beings called guardian of destiny to that sphere that is mainly for their rearing. The children of ascending mortals are always re-personalized with the physical status at the time of death, except they don't have reproductive potential. The children are re-personalized when one or both parents reach the mansion worlds; and the parents can see their children periodically, despite their busy programs. The children are given every opportunity to choose the heavenly way as they would have on earth.

In the probationary world, the children are separated, depending on whether they had an Adjuster. As I mentioned before, the Adjuster doesn't come to dwell in the minds of children until they are around six years old. Children of pre-Adjuster age are cared for in family groups of five in ages ranging from infant until they reach age five, or until the Adjuster arrives.

The Adjuster indwelt, children and youth in the unique world are also reared in families of five, ranging in ages six to 14. Any time after 16, if the final choice has been made, they are transported to the first mansion world. The guardians of destiny, "Seraphim," take care of the youth in the probationary nursery just as they spiritually minister to mortals on our planet.

In the mansion worlds, we resume our lives where we left off before death overtook us. Humans from our planet will notice considerable changes though. But if we had been from a more normal world, where the prince of that world had not taken them into rebellion or their biological up-lifters had not defaulted, we wouldn't notice much change.

Mansion World Number One

The center of activities on the first mansion world is the Resurrection Hall; there, we will find the enormous temple where the personality is reassembled. This massive structure is the meeting place of the seraphic guardians of destiny, the Thought Adjuster, and the archangels of the resurrection of the dead. The Life Carriers also work with the Higher Beings in the resurrection of the dead.

The Thought Adjuster (the God within) transforms the mortal mind recordings and the active creature memory patterns from the material to the spiritual. These spiritual factors of mind-memory and creature personality are forever a part of the God within. The creature mind-matrix and passive potential of identity are present in the morontia soul that was entrusted to the keeping of the guardian of destiny. It is the reuniting of the morontia soul that was assigned to the seraphim, and the spiritual mind entrusted to the Thought Adjuster, that reassembles the creature personality and constitutes the resurrection of a sleeping survivor.

From the Resurrection Hall, we proceed to the Melchizedeks sector, where we are assigned permanent residence; and then we will be allowed ten days of personal liberty. Currently, we are free to explore the immediate vicinity of our new home and to acquaint ourselves with the studies that lie ahead. We can also look up the registry and call upon our loved ones or other earth friends who might have gone to mansion worlds before us. At the end of the 10-day period of leisure, we begin the ascended steps to our Paradise journey. The mansion worlds are actual training spheres, not merely detention planets. From the time we die on earth and resurrect on the mansion worlds, mortal humans gain absolutely nothing aside from experiencing the fact of survival.

Mansion World Number Two

On the second mansion world, we are inducted into the morontia life. The different groups of morontia organization begin to take form in this sphere, and social groups begin to take shape. Communities organize and the advancing mortals institute new and formal orders of governments. Here, we also meet different orders of ascending life. For example, a mortal from our planet is considered a God fused being—a being that can merge with the God within. Beings from other planets are not all God-fused beings; some may be Son-fused or Spirit-fused beings. While the orders of celestial may differ, they are all friendly. In all the Ascension life, we won't find anything that will compare to human intolerance or the discrimination of the caste systems that we have in our world. As we ascend higher into the mansion worlds, they are swarmed with morontia life, and they are more like beings on Jerusem (the headquarters world of our local solar system). It is the higher world that is called heaven in the Bible beauty beyond our imagination.

Our morontia body is developed and adjusted each time we advance to a higher mansion world. We are taken to different worlds by seraphic transport while we sleep and wake up with new fully developed bodies in the Resurrection Hall. It appears that each mansion has its Resurrection Hall. The only difference is our Adjuster's memory remains fully intact as we go from one world to the other. The mind that was wholly animalistic perished with the physical brain, but everything else of value—the good we achieve in life—is retained as part of the personal memory that stays with us all the way to the highest of universes and further to infinity.

Although we have morontia bodies that are more spiritual, we go through all seven of the mansion worlds eating, drinking and resting. We partake of the order of food, which is a type of energy unknown on our planet. The body fully uses the food and water, so there is no waste. From sphere to sphere, we grow less material, more intellectual and slightly more spiritual. Our spiritual growth is the greatest on the last three spheres of the seven progressive worlds we must traverse.

Biological deficiencies were, for the most part, taken care of on the first morontia world. Mansion world number two, more precisely, provides for the removal of all phases of mental hang-ups and cures all types of mental conflicts.

Mansion World Number Three

The Higher Ones also call the mansion world's mansonia, and the third mansonia is the headquarters for the mansion world teachers. There are millions of these advanced teachers on the mansions and higher morontia worlds. These glorified cherubim angels serve as morontia teachers on the mansion worlds all the way up to the last sphere of our local universe. They will be some of the last to give us an affectionate goodbye when leaving our system for a few ages on our way to super worlds.

When we reach the third mansion world, we are granted a permit to visit the third transition sphere. (There appears to be a transition world for each mansion we ascend, and we get the opportunity to visit them.) The third transition sphere is the headquarters of the angelic order of teachers and the home of their various system training schools. We can also visit Jerusem (Jerusem headquarters of our local system), where it is claimed you'll have an incredibly beautiful life as I have mentioned. I have tried to grasp for you, the reader, what these worlds would be like when we get there. It is great that The Urantia Book gives us a bird's-eye view of some of these higher worlds so that we can bask in the vibrational thoughts of those worlds.

On this third world, positive educational work has begun. The training on the first two mansion worlds is to help us gain whatever we were deficient of from life in the flesh; in other words, these two worlds are for the supplementing experience we lacked in our experience in the flesh.

On the third mansion worlds, the survivors will begin their progressive morontia culture. The purpose of this training is to enhance our understanding of the relationship of the morontia mota, and mortal logic, the coordination of morontia and human philosophy. ("Mota" is the wisdom of the morontia level of reality, the mindal mechanism for the comprehension of cosmic meaning and the interrelationship of the universe.) "Mindal" seems to be some energy related to the thinking process of the universe. (There are a few terms I struggled with in The Urantia Book, and before I could understand the more significant portion of the book, I sent a glossary from the Fellowship group of The Urantia Book.) The third mansion is the real introduction to the intelligent comprehension of cosmic meaning and universe interrelationships.

Mansion World Number Four

Reaching the fourth mansion world, we are well on our way into the morontia life. On this mansion, the ascenders become familiar with the headquarters and training schools of the super-angels, including the Brilliant Evening Star. Through the office of these super-angels of the fourth transition world, the ascended visitors can draw close to the various orders of the Sons and Daughters of God during their periodic visit to Jerusem; here, new grandeurs are progressively unfolding to the expanding minds of these ascenders.

It is on mansion world number four where the ascending mortals are first introduced to the demands and excitement of the real social life of the morontia creatures. It is a new experience for the ascendant beings to participate in the social activities that's not based on personal exaggeration or self-seeking conquests. But a new social order is being introduced—one based on understanding, empathy, appreciation of each other and unselfish love of mutual service. They go forward in the mastering of common goals of the worlds of Paradise. The ascenders are all becoming self-conscious of God-knowing, God-revealing, God-seeking, and God-finding.

Mansion World Number Five

As we are transported to the fifth mansion world, it is considered a tremendous step in the life of a morontia progressive. The experience of the fifth mansion world is a real example of Jerusem Life. The culture of this world is probably comparable to our planetary development as it will evolve in the next 10 to 15 thousand years from now, especially if our spiritual awakening improves. All this training is to prepare us for residential status on Jerusem. It was the duty of the Planetary Prince of this world as I mentioned earlier, his staff, plus Adam and Eve, the planetary up-lifters, to prepare us for the higher realms. But because of the rebellion of Lucifer and the default of Adam and Eve, our planet lags far behind.

On the fifth world, we become proficient in several universal languages, as all ascending mortals are multilingual. We will also study the constellation world and will meet for the first time the instructors who will begin to prepare us for the constellation sojourn.

On mansion world number five, a real birth of cosmic consciousness takes place. Here, we become universe-minded. On earth, during the last part of the twentieth century, there was much talk about cosmic consciousness and many books were written on the subject. Mostly, this is where our horizon dramatically expands, and we are becoming aware of the grand and magnificent destiny that awaits all who complete the progressive Paradise ascension courses. It appears we have to go through a lot of studies; but I am sure those who want to go will have the opportunity, and if they choose not to, we have free will. We must realize those pilgrims are being prepared to rule universes yet in the process of being born.

Mansion World Number Six

Here, the earth pilgrims receive their first lesson in the prospective spirit career, which follows immediately after graduation from the morontia training of the local universe. Here, we welcome our initial instruction in the technique of universe administration. The first lessons, which include the affairs of a whole universe, are given. This brilliant age is for ascending humans who usually witness the perfect fusion of the human mind and the divine Adjuster. In potential, this fusion may have happened before, but the actual working together of the two minds is not achieved many times until the mortal reach the fifth or sixth mansion world.

Soon after the confirmation of Adjuster fusion, the new morontia being is introduced for the first time to their fellow beings by their new name (this is believed to be the name John spoke of in Revelation 2:17). After which we ascenders are granted 40 days, which about 200 of our days, of spiritual rest from all routine activities where we will commune with ourselves and choose from one of the optional routes to higher worlds and Paradise. Still, we are a long way from being true spiritual beings as the Higher Beings, although we are spiritually super-mortals and a little lower than angels. But we are genuinely becoming beautiful creatures, and one day we will be far above the angels; that is when “the last will be first,” Luke 13:30.

During our journey on mansion world number six, students achieve a status that is comparable to the high development of those evolutionary worlds, which have generally gone beyond the stage called Light and Life (upper stages humankind will reach in the distant future). The shadow of our mortal nature is growing less and less as we ascend these worlds one by one. We humans will become more adorable as we

leave behind the coarse vestige of planetary animal origin. Rising through trials and tribulations helps to become glorified mortals very kind and understanding, very sympathetic and tolerant.

Mansion World Number Seven

Mansion world number seven is our crowning experience of the mansion worlds, where we will receive instructions of many teachers; and all will cooperate in the task of preparing us for residence on Jerusem.

If there are any discernible differences between the mortal that came from isolated and retarded worlds and those survivors from more advanced and enlightened worlds, it is virtually eradicated during the time spent on the seventh mansion world. Not all the planets in our universe followed Lucifer into rebellion. In this world, we will be cleansed of all residues of heredity unwholesomeness, environment, and unspiritual tendencies. The last waste of the “mark of the beast” is rooted out here (Revelation 20:4).

The formation of classes for graduation to Jerusem, begins with this world we have gone from one world to another as individuals; and now, we prepare to go to Jerusem in groups. The personnel of the seventh mansion world assembles on the sea of glass to witness our departure for Jerusem with residential status. (The sea of glass is for the Higher Beings what the airport is to us, humans.) Hundreds of thousands of times we may have visited Jerusem, but always as a guest; now, we are headed for Jerusem, our local system capital, in the company of a group of our fellow graduates who are bidding farewell forever to the whole morontia career as ascending mortals. As we continue our journey, we will soon be welcomed on the receiving field of the headquarters world as Jerusem citizens.

On the first mansion world, we were mostly humans—a mortal being minus a material body. On the last mansion world, we are human minds occupying a morontia form—a substantial body of the morontia world—not a mortal of flesh and blood. We pass from the mortal state to the permanent status at the time of Adjuster fusion, and by the time we have finished the Jerusem career, we will be full-fledged morontians.

Jerusem Citizenship

After we have attained residence on the system headquarters, there will be no more literal resurrections to be experienced. The morontia bodies we will receive after leaving the mansion worlds will be of service to us until we are finished our training of the local universe. After our local universe training, we'll then have to experience the super cosmos and go on to Paradise. To us humans, this may seem like a great deal of practice, but one must remember we are talking about living forever; infinity is a long time. I would imagine this is what the metaphysicians meant when they claimed that for the Higher Beings, there is no time; all is the now, no beginning and no end to eternity. Since we won't be in the same frame of mind, we are in on this planet, one billion years may not seem long to us. The following information I quote for your benefit, the reader:

[47:10.1] The reception of a new class of mansion world graduates is the signal for all Jerusem to assemble as a committee of welcome. Even the spornagia enjoy the arrival of these triumphant ascenders of evolutionary origin, those who have run the planetary race and finished the mansion world's progression. Only the physical controllers and Morontia Power Supervisors are absent from these occasions of rejoicing.

John the Revelator saw a vision of the arrival of a class of advancing mortals from the seventh mansion world to their first heaven, the glories of Jerusem. He recorded: "And I saw as it were a sea of glass mingled with fire; and those who had gained the victory over the beast that

*was originally in them and over the image that persisted through the mansion worlds and finally over the last mark and trace, standing on the sea of glass, having the harps of God, and singing the song of deliverance from mortal fear and death.*³

In this quote, “spornagia” is an animal order of creatures responsible for the care and cultivation of the landscapes of the “headquarters worlds” in the local universe. It’s mentioned in The Urantia Book that some of the animal creatures on higher worlds are very intelligent.

At this stage of our evolution on planet earth, we are not able to complete all the necessary training to reach the higher worlds; death usually overcomes us before we get the required training. The purpose of the mansions is to give us the necessary training. In the far distant future, when humanity is more evolved, most of those mansion worlds will be eliminated as far as our humanity is concerned. I imagine those spheres will be used for other purposes. At that time, our understanding will have evolved enough to get almost all their necessary experience on earth, just as Enoch did. They will also live to reach the age of 150 or more.

Before this age, humankind will have learned to control their birth rate. A family will be allowed to have perhaps only two children, or else there will indeed be an overpopulation problem. People of that age will indeed be involved in learning about the higher worlds at least by age 40; then, by the time they have reached age 90 and beyond, they will be able to merge with the higher self, where the physical body will be no more as Enoch’s body had disintegrated (the Bible said God took him). At that time, when people merge with their higher self, death will be celebrated because people will know their loved ones are going to higher worlds and continue to evolve.

Ascending Mortals

We human beings are considered ascending mortals. Those in the higher worlds are known as descending spirit beings. An example of this is Jesus Christ in his last initiation, descending from the higher realms as a Creator Son of God to the lower state of a human being; when he accomplished his purpose, he re-ascended with higher power. Most of the Higher Beings descend and work in dimensions we humans are not capable of perceiving. We understand that some of them are guardian angels.

We ascending mortals start off as the lowest willed creatures of God and then climb into higher worlds, thereby becoming God-willed beings, Sons, and Daughters of God. The Higher Beings have to prove their worthiness by descending and helping us humans reach higher worlds. If it weren’t for them, although we are not able to see them, we would make little or no spiritual progress. There are other types of beings on the higher worlds that are like the animal kingdom on our planet, and they don’t have free will, nor do they have souls. The animals die out, and their remains appear as evolved energy; the conscious they did possess returns to nature with no recollection whatsoever of having been a creature.

[48:0.1] *The Gods cannot — at least they do not — transform a creature of gross animal nature into a perfected spirit by some mysterious act of creative magic. When the Creators desire to produce perfect beings, they do so by direct and original creation, but they never undertake to convert animal-origin and material creatures into beings of perfection in a single step.*

*The morontia life, extending as it does over the various stages of the local universe career, is the only possible approach whereby material mortals could attain the threshold of the spirit world. What magic could death, the natural dissolution of the material body, hold that such a simple step should instantly transform the mortal and material mind into an immortal and perfected spirit? Such beliefs are but ignorant superstitions and pleasing fables.*⁴

Chapter 7

Adamson and Ratta

Adamson was the oldest son of Adam and Eve, one of the children who had decided to stay on earth with his parents. This oldest son often heard Van and Amadon tell the story of their highland home in the north, and after helping his parents establish the second Garden, he was determined to go in search of the land of his youthful fantasy. Adamson was 120 years old at that time and had fathered 32 pure-line Violet race children in the first Garden. He wanted to remain with his parents and continue to assist with the second garden, but he was very hurt by the loss of his mate and their children who had all decided to go to Edentia to become wards of the Most Highs. (Edentia the headquarters of Norlatiadek the constellation to which our system belongs).

Adamson did not want to desert his parents. He wasn't the type to flee from hardship or danger, but for him, the people of the second Garden were far from satisfying. He made significant efforts to increase the defense and construction of the second Garden. When he decided to leave for the North, his departure was somewhat pleasant, but his parents grieved at losing their oldest son and having him go into a strange and hostile land. They feared he would never return.

A group of 27 people followed Adamson northward in quest of the people of his childhood dreams. In about three years, Adamson and his group found the people he was seeking and among those people, he met a beautiful young woman who claimed she was the last pure-line descendant of the prince's staff. This woman, Ratta, said her ancestors were all descendants of two of Prince Caligastia's staff. She was the last of her race as she had no sisters or brothers. She said that she had decided not to mate and not have any children. I guess she felt guilty because of her ancestors' rebellion, but after seeing the majestic Adamson, she lost her heart. When he told her about the Garden of Eden, and how the prediction of Van and Amadon had come true, she listened and became possessed with one single thought: to marry this son of Adam. This idea occurred to Adamson also, and within three months, they married. The two were superhuman beings, and they had 67 children. These children were the origin of a great line of world leaders, and their offspring helped to make up the Assyrian people.

Adamson lived 369 years; he returned to visit his mother and father many times. Every seven years, he and his mate journeyed south to visit the second Garden. Adamson also had the midwayers to keep him informed concerning the status of his people.

During Adamson and Ratta's long lives, they did an excellent service in building a new and independent world center for truth and righteousness. Adamson and Ratta had at their disposal a splendid corps of marvelous helpers who worked with them throughout their long lives. They promoted and advanced truth and spread higher standards of spirituality, intellectualism, and natural living. The result of their efforts for world betterment was never really forgotten even after world retrogression had advanced. The offspring of Adamson and Ratta maintained a high culture for almost 7,000 years. Later, the Adamsonites mixed with the neighboring Nodites and Andonites, who were numbered "among the

mighty of men.” Some of the advances of that age continued and became an intrinsic part of the culture that later bloomed into European civilization. This information you’ll find [Paper 77 section 5] in The Urantia Book.

Those Higher Beings make the statement the center of civilization began in the region east of the end of the Caspian Sea near Kopet Dagh. They claim that a short distance into the foothills of Turkestan is the vestiges of what was once the Adamsonite's headquarters. A short distance from the place Adamson headquarters once stood, across the Caspian Sea into Turkey near what today is called Sanliurfa, Gobekli Tepe was discovered. The Neolithic archaeological ruins were first uncovered in the 1960s, but their significance wasn’t truly realized until 1994. The site is located in southeastern Turkey. This site is said to be 12,000 years old, and the oldest known civilization of very advanced people. I’m convinced the people who once occupied this area were the distant descendants of Adamson.

Archaeologists have discovered several elongated skulls at Gobekli Tepe, and it is mentioned in The Urantia Book, [81:4.2] that Adam and his descendants had elongated heads. Another advanced civilized Neolithic site called Nevali Cori said to be 8,000 years old, flooded by the waters of the Ataturk Dam, was discovered in the same area of Turkey as Gobekli Tepe. Long before Gobekli Tepe was discovered in 1955 The Urantia Book mentioned Adam and Eve’s oldest son and his wife started a civilization in that area of Turkey thousands upon thousands of years ago. Gobekli Tepe is 350 miles south of Mt. Ararat. At these highland sites, in a narrow fertile land lying in the lower foothills of the Kopet area, arose at different periods of four different cultures fostered by four different groups of Adamsonites.

The second of these groups migrated westward to Greece and the island of the Mediterranean. This is the reason why, in ancient times, Greece claimed they were the offspring of Gods. More recently DNA revealed Ancient Greek Migrants Built The Famous Stonehenge 6000 Years AGO, DNA REVEALS! <https://www.greecehighdefinition.com/.../ancient-greek-migrants-built-the-famous-stone> Offspring of Adamson’s descendants migrated north and west entering Europe with the blended stock of the last of the Andites coming out of Mesopotamia; and they numbered among the Andites—Aryan invaders of India.

For nearly 30 thousand years, the second Eden was the cradle of civilization. In Mesopotamia the Adamic sent forth their progeny to the ends of the earth latterly amalgamating with the Nodites and Sangik tribes; the mixture of these races was known as the Andites, and this was the beginning of the Aryan race. The men and women who initiated the heroic works were from this area and who have so enormously accelerated culture progress on earth.

With all the knowledge the History Channel has accumulated about "Ancient Aliens," its apparent ancient aliens are the ones who took Adam and Eve's offspring from one continent to the other. As I mentioned, I believe they were the midwayers, who come and go in and out of our dimension at will through some type of tunnel or wormhole. It appears they had landing ports to accommodate them at some of these sights for example, the Nazca Lines in Peru. The experts say that the Nazca lines couldn't be a runway, but whoever saw a UFO on a runway, all they were about is location. Our ancestors in the early days knew Adam and Eve's children were descendants of celestial beings and to them, they were the offspring of sons of God.

In this next section, I quote more from The Urantia Book so that you, the reader, will have a better understanding of the racial and culture distribution on Urantia (earth).

Racial and Cultural Distribution

[78:1.1] *Although the minds and morals of the races were at a low level at the time of Adam's arrival, physical evolution had gone on quite unaffected by the exigencies of the Caligastia Rebellion. Adam's contribution to the biologic status of the races, notwithstanding the partial failure of the undertaking, enormously up stepped the people of Urantia.*

[78:1.2] *Adam and Eve also contributed much that was of value to the social, moral and intellectual progress of mankind; civilization was immensely quickened by the presence of their offspring. But thirty-five thousand years ago, the world at large possessed little culture. Certain centers of civilization existed here and there, but most of Urantia languished in savagery. Racial and cultural distribution was as follows:*

[78:1.3] *1. The Violet race — Adamites and Adamsonites. The chief center of Adamite culture was in the second garden, located in the triangle of the Tigris and Euphrates rivers; this was, indeed, the cradle of Occidental and Indian civilizations. The secondary or northern center of the Violet race was the Adamsonite headquarters, situated east of the southern shore of the Caspian Sea near the Kopet Mountains. From these two centers, there went forth to the surrounding lands the culture and life plasm which so immediately quickened all the races.*

[78:1.4] *Pre-Sumerians and other Nodites. There were also present in Mesopotamia, near the mouth of the rivers, remnants of the ancient culture of the days of Dalamatia. With the passing millenniums, this group became thoroughly admixed with the Adamites to the north, but they never entirely lost their Nodite traditions. Various other Nodite groups that had settled in the Levant were, in general, absorbed by the later expanding Violet race.*

[78:1.5] *3. The Andonites maintained five or six fairly representative settlements to the north and east of the Adamson headquarters. They were also scattered throughout Turkestan, while isolated islands of them persisted throughout Eurasia, especially in mountainous regions. These aborigines still held the northlands of the Eurasian continent, together with Iceland and Greenland, but they had long since been driven from the plains of Europe by the Blue man and from the river valleys of farther Asia by the expanding Yellow race.*

[78:1.6] *4. The Redman occupied the Americas, having been driven out of Asia over fifty thousand years before the arrival of Adam.*

[78:1.7] *5. The Yellow race. The Chinese peoples were well established in control of eastern Asia. Their most advanced settlements were situated to the northwest of modern China in regions bordering on Tibet.*

[78:1.8] *6. The Blue race. The Blue men were scattered all over Europe, but their better centers of culture were situated in the then fertile valleys of the Mediterranean basin and in northwestern Europe. Neanderthal absorption had greatly retarded the culture of the Blue Man, but he was otherwise the most aggressive, adventurous and exploratory of all the evolutionary peoples of Eurasia.*

[78:1.9] *7. Pre-Dravidian India. The complex mixture of races in India — embracing every race on earth, but especially the Green, Orange, and Black — maintained a culture slightly above that of the outlying regions.*

[78:1.10] *8. The Sahara civilization. The superior elements of the Indigo race had their most progressive settlements in what is now the great Sahara Desert. This Indigo-black group carried extensive strains of the submerged Orange and Green races. (I believe they were the people of Nabta Playa and today we know some of them as the Dogan).*

[78:1.11] 9. *The Mediterranean basin. The most highly blended race outside of India occupied what is now the Mediterranean basin. Here, blue men from the north and Saharans from the south met and mingled with Nodites and Adamites from the east.*

[78:1.12] *This was the picture of the world prior to the beginnings of the great expansions of the Violet race, about twenty-five thousand years ago. The hope of future civilization lay in the second Garden between the rivers of Mesopotamia. Here, in southwestern Asia, there existed the potential of a great civilization, the possibility of the spread to the world of the ideas and ideals, which had been salvaged from the days of Dalamatia and the times of Eden.*

[78:1.13] *Adam and Eve had left behind a limited, but potent progeny, and the celestial observers on Urantia (earth) waited anxiously to find out how these descendants of the erring Material Son and Daughter would acquit themselves. '*

[80:2.1-2] *The Urantia Book: The early expansion of the violet race into Europe was cut short by certain rather sudden climatic and geologic changes. With the retreat of the northern ice fields, the water-laden winds from the west shifted to the north, gradually turning the great open pasture regions of Sahara into a barren desert. This drought dispersed the smaller-statured brunets, dark-eyed but long-headed dwellers of the great Sahara plateau.*

The purer indigo elements moved southward to the forests of central Africa, where they have ever since remained. The more mixed groups spread out in three directions: The superior tribes to the west migrated to Spain and thence to adjacent parts of Europe, forming the nucleus of the later Mediterranean long-headed brunet races. The least progressive division to the east of the Sahara plateau migrated to Arabia and thence through northern Mesopotamia and India to faraway Ceylon. The central group moved north and east to the Nile valley and into Palestine. This section is suggesting the advanced people of the Sahara Desert were involved in the establishment of the Egyptian civilization and with the people of Palestine, the original Jews.

For thousands of years, the descendants of Adam and Eve sweated in their labors along the rivers of Mesopotamia, trying to solve their irrigation and flood control problems to the south, attempting to perfect their defenses to the north, and striving to preserve the traditions and glory of the first Eden.

The heroism and the leadership shown in the Second Garden were unusual and constituted one of the inspiring epics of our earth's history. These beautiful souls never lost sight of the purpose of the Adamic mission—to infuse the world with their genes. They courageously fought off the influence of the surrounding and inferior tribes, while they willingly sent forth their sons and daughters in a constant stream as emissaries to the earth's people. If you watched The History Channel's "Ancient Aliens," you will see how successful they were. They built Pyramids all over the world, and at times, this depleted the home culture; but always these remarkable people rehabilitated themselves. One of the ways to recognize Adam and Eve's descendants in different parts of the world is by the elongated skulls, with red, yellow, or brown hair, found all over the world.

The Urantia Book mentioned paper 76, section 4 paragraph 1: *Adam and Eve were the founders of the violet race of men, the ninth human race to appear on Urantia (earth.) Adam and his offspring had blue eyes, and the violet peoples were characterized by fair complexions and light hair color — yellow, red, and brown.*

Quoted from paper 81:4.2] of The Urantia Book”: “Each of the Urantia races was identified by certain distinguishing physical characteristics. The Adamites and Nodites were long-headed.” The Adamites were the descendants of Adam and Eve; the Nodites were the descendants of the people of the Land of Nod. For thousands of years, these two races mixed and became the Andites and later evolved into the Aryan and the very advanced Sumerian races. [78: 5.7]: One hundred and thirty-two of this race, embarking in a fleet of small boats from Japan, eventually reached South America and by intermarriage with the natives of the Andes established the ancestry of the later rulers of the Incas. They crossed the Pacific by easy stages, tarrying on the many islands they found along the way. The islands of the Polynesian group were both more numerous and larger than now, and these Andite sailors, together with some who followed them, biologically modified the native groups in transit. Many flourishing centers of civilization grew up on these now submerged lands as a result of Andite penetration.

Easter Island was long a religious and administrative center of one of these lost groups. But of the Andites who navigated the Pacific of long ago, none but the one hundred and thirty-two ever reached the mainland of the Americas.

Recently there was an article on the internet that states: “People from Melanesia contain traces of DNA belonging to an unknown species, according to an exciting new computer analysis. Scientists say that Melanesians, people from a region in the South Pacific, contain DNA of an unknown human species in their genetic makeup. “

Today, you will find many blond-headed Melanesia children and some with blue eyes. The above quote mentioned the violet race. I would imagine they were something like the red and yellow races as far as color is a concern.

More recent years addition to all the above information there is the story of Father Carlos Crespi Croci who lived in the small town of Cuenca in Ecuador and died in 1982. “The story of father Crespi is one of the most enigmatic stories ever told an unknown civilization, unbelievable artifacts, massive amounts of gold, depictions of strange figures connecting America to Sumerian, and symbols belonging to an unknown language. The account of what occurred reveals once again a conspiracy to hide the truth from the eyes of the public.” This quote is taken from Ancient Origin.com. More information connecting the descendants of Adam and Eve to South America, and an unknown civilization. You will learn after the death of father Crespi all his artifacts were taken and hidden, no one ever saw them again. Once again Adam and Eve's descendants are revealed as the lost civilization.

The civilization, society, and culture status of the Adamites were far above the general level of the evolutionary races of the earth during that period. Only among the old settlements of Van, Amadon and the Adamsonites were their civilizations in anyway comparable. The second Garden civilization of artificial construction since it had not evolved as a normal civilization; and it was, therefore, doomed to deteriorate until it reached a normal evolutionary level.

Adam and Eve left a tremendous intellectual and spiritual legacy. After Adam’s death and the tradition grew weak through the passing of millennia, the culture level of the Adamites steadily deteriorated until they reached a stable reciprocal balance with the status of the surrounding people.

The Andites Race

Not long after the death of Adam and Eve, the Andites race became the essential blend for the pure-line Violet race, a mixture of Nodite and evolutionary people. But the Andites had a much more significant percentage of the Adamic race than our modern races. In general, the term Andites is used to indicate those people whose racial inheritance was one-eighth to one-sixth of the Violet race blood. The earliest Andites originated in the land next to Mesopotamia more than 25 thousand years ago, and they consisted of a blend of Adamites, Nodites, and the evolutionary races. Concentric circles of fading Adamic races surrounded the second Garden. And it was on the borderline of this racial melting pot that the Andites race came into being. These Andites continued to migrate until they circumnavigated the globe and discovered the last remote continent. They were the mixed descendants of Adam and Eve, and I believe "Ancient Aliens" took them from one continent to the other; after many years they became the Aryan race, the ancestors of the Sumerians. And I believe that these ancient aliens are the midwayers The Urantia Book mentioned they are on earth, but in another dimension. I sincerely think they are the ones the UFO researchers are trying to find. It appears that after Pentecost much of the activities of the midwayers or aliens had ceased. They weren't allowed to make open contact with humans, only on the rare occasion were they to contact humans.

Initially, the Andites were river dwellers; and they were accustomed to the rivers swelling and overflowing their banks at certain seasons. These periodic floods were annual events in their lives. But soon, new perils threatened the villages of Mesopotamia as a result of progressive geologic changes to the north. After the submergence of the first Eden, the mountains around the eastern coast of the Mediterranean and those to the north continued to rise. The elevation of the highlands greatly increased around 5 thousand B.C. This, together with greatly accelerated snowfalls on the northern mountains, caused unheard-of floods each spring throughout the Euphrates Valley. These floods grew increasingly worse; eventually, people of the river areas were driven from their homes to the eastern highlands. For almost 1 thousand years, scores of cities practically deserted because of floods. The Jews changed the story and flooded the whole world to suit their purpose when the Babylonians in B.C. 597 captured them.

The Hebrew priests had a difficult time trying to trace the Jewish race back to Adam and Eve; as their task was about impossible, they did the next best thing. They abandoned those efforts and said, "Why not let the whole world drown, (the time of Noah's flood)? And is where they falsified their history; in this way, they were in a better position to trace Abraham to one of the surviving sons of Noah, making a connection to their days. Those Higher Beings stated in The Urantia Book that Noah and the universal flood was an invention of the Hebrew priesthood during the Babylonian captivity. They say there has never been a global flood since life began on Earth the only time that water covered the whole Earth was during the Archeozoic ages before land began to appear.

We need to do a careful analysis of the story of Noah and the Ark as it's told in the Bible. First, four men can't build a boat that would carry two of every kind of animal in the world and seven of a variety for some animals. A ship that size would have been humongous, they would not have been able to see from one end of the ship to the other. In the Bible, Genesis 8:5: "And the water decreased continually until the tenth month where tops of the mountains were seen." How could Noah and his sons get enough food and water in the boat to last two of a kind of every animal

in the entire world for ten months? And what about the animals' dung that would accumulate? If we give it a little thought, the whole story sounds ridiculous. How could the Western world believe a story like this to be true for so many years and call themselves intelligent human beings? I know some will say to God all things are possible. We must stop trying to use God to wiggle our way out of our stupidity and stop letting others use sorcery on us. For us to believe some of these stories, we must be under some spell.

The legend of Noah and the Ark, this story told in the third millennium B.C.E. in Mesopotamia, an area called Sumer, where Iraq is located today. In 1872 George Smith, a British scholar, was studying cuneiform tablet fragments at the British Museum.² These cuneiform fragments are now called the Epic of Gilgamesh. The cuneiforms were excavated from the ruins of an ancient city known as Nineveh in the land of Mesopotamia when Smith deciphered those cuneiform fragments and announced that one of those fragments told a story about a boat being built. A great flood, of a bird being released to seek dry land as the tide receded, and of a man, his wife, and family surviving the flood, all of England was in an uproar. The Urantia Book, claims Noah was a winemaker and lived at a place called Aram a settlement near Erech in Mesopotamia during ancient times.

From the stories found on the clay tablets from the Sumerians' ruins, one can conclude that the Jews fabricated their history years after leaving Egypt as slaves. I recently read a book titled *The Bible Unearthed* by two leading scholars, Israel Finkelstein, and Neil Asher Silberman. At the time their book was published in 2002, Israel Finkelstein was director of the Sonia and Marco Nadler Institute of Archaeology at Tel Aviv University, and Neil Asher Silberman was director of Historical International for the Ename Center for Archaeology in Belgium. They presented a dramatically revised picture of Israel and its neighbors. In their book, they argued that important evidence in diggings in Israel, Egypt, Jordan, and Lebanon suggests that many of the stories in the Bible—the wandering of the Patriarchs, David, and Solomon's vast empire—are just stories created by Jewish authors about 2,600 years ago in Judah are, not actual historical facts. I believe they got much of their information when they stayed in Babylon around 597 B.C. The amazing thing about this book is that these two men are Jewish, and they started out to prove that most of the stories in the Bible are based on facts. I can imagine their surprise when they are confronted with the truth. I admire those two writers for bringing forth the truth, as they saw it, and not trying to sugarcoat the facts.³

On December 3, 1872, Smith gave a public lecture on the Epic of Gilgamesh that sent shock waves through Europe. It questioned the authenticity of the Old Testament. The Sumerian Noah lived around 2 thousand years before the Jewish people. The Sumerian legend of Noah and The Ark took place about 2,900 years before the coming of Christ. In a book written by Robert M. Best titled, *Noah's Ark and the Ziusudra Epic*.⁴ Best writes about the flood in detail and explains how it is physically impossible for there to be a global flood. A global flood would no doubt force the earth out of its orbit. If a worldwide flood destroyed everyone but one family in the Middle East, as reported in the Bible, how did other cultures know there was a flood? It's reported as many as 500 different cultures around the world have myths and traditions of floods. How would these people know there was a flood in their area if everyone was destroyed?

No doubt there was flooding at different times, and in different parts of the world, and everyone wasn't destroyed. The Sumerian flood only covered around 100 square miles. Even today, they have problems with flooding around the Tigris-Euphrates Valley. In 1954, flooding, heavy thunderstorms, and torrential rain threatened Baghdad with destruction. It submerged the low-lying plains, for hundreds of miles. This must have

happened during the time of Noah, but it has been blown out of proportion over the centuries. All we must do is look at the flooding we have today such as Hurricane Katrina and the Tsunami in Asia in 2004, when about 120 thousand people lost their lives.

The flood completed the disruption of the Andite's civilization. At the end of this period of the deluge, the second Garden was destroyed. The only trace of their former glory remained only among the Sumerians. The vestige of this, one of the oldest civilizations, is to be found in Mesopotamia between the Euphrates and Tigris Rivers, and in the northeast and northwest. Older remnants of the days of Dalamatia exist under the waters of the Persian Gulf, and the first Garden of Eden lies submerged under the eastern end of the Mediterranean Sea, so says The Urantia Book.

The Sumerians Last of the Andites

The last of the Andites (Aryan) scattering broke the backbone of Mesopotamia civilization, but a small minority of the superior race remained in their homeland near the mouths of the rivers. These were the Sumerians. Many thousands of years ago their ancestors became Andites by race, and they clung to the culture of the Nodites and the ancient tradition of Dalamatia.

It was during the flood times that the city of Susa greatly prospered. The towns that were on the lowland, which flooded, and dilapidated quickly; and the cities on the highland became headquarters for the arts and crafts of the day. With the later diminishing of the flood, Ur became the center of the pottery industry. The Bible's Abraham was from the land of Ur. The river deposit had built up the ground around this area, so these settlements suffered less from the flood, and they had a better control system at the widening of the Euphrates and Tigris rivers. The Andites, along the Euphrates and Tigris Valleys, were peaceful grain growers; however, raids from the barbarians, from Turkistan and the Iranian plateau constantly plagued them.

Now, these Andites of the Euphrates Valley faced a much worse invasion brought about by the increasing drought of the highland pastures. This invasion was more severe with the enemy surrounding them. The herdsman and hunters owned many tamed horses, and it was their possession of horses that gave the enemy a military advantage over their wealthy neighbors in the south. In a relatively short time, they overran all of Mesopotamia, forcing the last waves of culture to spread out over all of Europe, western Asia, and northern Africa.

These conquerors of Mesopotamia consist of the better Andites strains of mixed northern races of Turkestan, including some of Adamson stock. These less advanced, but more vigorous tribes from the north, were willing to assimilate the residue of the civilization of Mesopotamia and development of the mixed people found in the Euphrates Valley. They revived many stages of the passing civilization of Mesopotamia, taking up the arts of some of the valley tribes, and much of the culture of the Sumerians. They even attempted to build a third Tower of Babel and later took on the term as their national name.

When these barbarian cavalymen from the northeast overthrew the whole Euphrates Valley, they could not conquer those Andites who dwelt around the mouth of the river on the Persian Gulf. These Sumerians were able to defend themselves because of superior intelligence, better weapons, and their extensive systems of military canals, which were next to the irrigation systems of interconnecting pools. The people were united, and they had a uniform religious group. They were able to maintain their national integrity long after their neighbors were broken up into city-states. None of the city groups were able to overcome the united Sumerians.

The invaders soon learned to trust and appreciate the peace-loving Sumerians as great teachers and executives of government. They were respected and sought after as teachers of the arts, and industry, directors of commerce and civil rulers; and were requested by people from the north, from Egypt in the west, even India in the east.

Soon after the breakup of the early Sumerians confederation, renegade descendants of the Sethite priests ruled the later city-states. These so-called priests started to refer to themselves as kings of the neighboring cities they had conquered. These people could not work together, as each town was jealous of the other city's deity. Each believed its municipal god to be superior to all other gods, so they refused to be ruled by an ordinary leader.

Sargon, the priest of Kish, who proclaimed himself king and started out to conquer all of Mesopotamia and adjoining lands, ended those long periods of weak rule of those city-states by priests. This, for a time, completed the city-state priest rule and priest control of each city-state having its municipal god and its ceremonial practices. But after the break-up of this Kish confederation, there was an extended period of constant warfare between cities for rulership. The rulership shifted between Sumer, Akkad, Kish, Erech, Ur, and Susa.

The Sumerians came to the end of their long journey on our planet. They suffered a severe breakdown at the hands of the northern Suites and Guites. Legash, the Sumerian's capital built on flood mounds, fell. Erech held out for 30 years after the fall of Akkad. By the time Hammurabi ruled (a famous king of Babylon), the Sumerians had become absorbed into the ranks of the northern Semites, and the Mesopotamia Andites passed from the pages of history. This was the end of the Aryan race, but their genes spread throughout the world by their offspring.

Before ending this section, if the reader should check out the History Channel episodes of "Ancient Aliens," season four, "The Greys." In this section, they mentioned that in 1849, 6 thousand years old cuneiforms were found in the land that was known as Sumer, where Iraq stands today. They are the earliest known human writings. On the cuneiforms, it states they had visitors from other worlds, and they called them "Anunnaki," who settled on our planet and these beings started inbreeding with the different tribes of the earth. They are the same ones the Bible calls the sons of God, Genesis 6:4. They were the 60 that rebelled, along with Lucifer that I mentioned in Chapter 3, which happened thousands upon thousands of years before the Sumerian's time, and the information greatly distorted by the time the Sumerians arrived.

Take for example in the epic of Gilgamesh, their King List there were 8 to 10 rulers or kings that reigned very long periods of time; these kings are said to have descended from heaven, and some ruled as long as 36 thousand years. But those so-called kings were the sons of God of Genesis 6:4 where sons of God had children by the daughters of men. There were 100 of these sons of God 50 men, and 50 women, as mentioned earlier. They were commissioned by ten groups, 10 to a group. Each group was presided over by one person, an example, the council for food and material welfare was presided over by one called Ang; thousands upon thousands of years later the Sumerians called them kings. They were the original sons of God, which was also called Anunnaki, (those who from heaven came). They reign over their group for thousands of years or until the fall of Lucifer. Some of them rebelled along with Lucifer, and the Tree of Life taken from them, and they died as the people of the earth; this tree explained in chapter 3. These sons of God came to earth to help civilize the tribes of the earth.



Father Carlos Crespi Croci was a Salesian monk who was born in Italy in 1891. He studied anthropology at the University of Milan before becoming a priest. In 1923, he was assigned to the small Andean city of Cuenca in Ecuador to work among the indigenous people.





Scientists Say Melanesians Carry DNA Of Unknown Species. Scientists say that Melanesians, people from a region in the South Pacific, contain DNA of an unknown human species in their genetic makeup. Ryan Bohlender told the annual meeting of the American Society of Human Genetics that the DNA was very unlikely to be Neanderthal or Denisovan – but is likely a third, unknown “human” relative.

Chapter 8

Machiventa Melchizedek

I will now direct the reader's attention to that part of The Urantia Book that tells us about the Melchizedeks, especially the one the Western World Bible calls the Priest of the highest as mentioned in [Hebrew 7:3]. "Without father, without mother, without descent, having neither beginning of days, nor end of life; but made like unto the Son of God." And this tells us he was from a higher world.

[93:0.1] *The Melchizedeks are widely known as emergency Sons for they engage in an amazing range of activities on the worlds of the local universe. When any extraordinary problem arises, or when something unusual is to be attempted, it is quite often a Melchizedek who accepts the assignment. The ability of the Melchizedek Sons to function in emergency on widely divergent levels of personality manifestation is peculiar to their order. Only the Life Carriers share to any degree this metamorphic range of personality function.*

*The Melchizedeks of the universe son-ship has been exceedingly active on Urantia (earth). A corps of twelve became receivers for your world shortly after the Caligastia secession and continues in authority until the time of Adam and Eve. These twelve returned to Urantia upon the default of Adam and Eve, and they continue thereafter as planetary receivers and on down to the days when Jesus of Nazareth, as the son of man, became the titular planetary Prince of Urantia.*¹

Following the default of Adam and Eve, although making progress intellectually, humans were slowly being depleted spiritually. Around 3,000 B.C., the concept of God had grown very weak in the minds of humans. The 12 Melchizedek Receivers (they were the 12 who returned to our planet after Adam and Eve's default) knew about Lord Michael's impending plans to take his last initiation on our world as Jesus Christ, but they didn't know when this would take place.

The 12 discussed the situation thoroughly, concerning the dimming of the spiritual light on earth; and they decided to petition the Most Highs of Edentia that something should be done to maintain the light of truth on Urantia. Their pleas dismissed with the words that the conduct of the affairs on planet 606 (Earth) of Satania was entirely in the hands of the Melchizedek custodians. The 12 then went to the one they called the Father Melchizedek for his advice. He advised them to continue to uphold truth in the manner of their choice until the arrival of a bestowal Son, who would rescue the planetary title from forfeiture and uncertainty. The 12 receivers realized the decision-making, as far as our earth's spirituality was concerned, was up to them. One of the 12, Machiventa Melchizedek, volunteered to do that which has only been done six times in the billions of years the local universe has been in existence: to appear on our earth as a temporary man, to bestow himself on our planet as an emergency Son of World Ministry the higher authority in our local universe granted permission. The incarnation of Machiventa Melchizedek completed near what was to become the city of Salem in Palestine. The Planetary Receivers, with the help of the Life Carriers, and several Master

Physical Controllers, and other celestial beings stationed on our planet during that time helped complete the materialization of this Melchizedek Son.

The Sage of Salem

According to these Higher Beings, it was 1,973 years before the coming of Jesus Christ when the Melchizedek incarnated on our planet. No human witnessed his materialization, but he was first noticed by mortals on the day he entered the tent of Amdon, a Chaldean herder of a Sumerian descendant. The announcement of his arrival was the statement he made to this sheepherder [93:0.1]: *I am Melchizedek Prince of El Elyon the Most High the one and only God.* ² When the herder recovered from his bewilderment, he drilled the stranger with questions, and he asked the Melchizedek if he would have supper with him. It was the first time Melchizedek had ever had material food in his extended universe career the nourishment that would sustain him for the next 94 years of life as a human being.

That night, as they talked under the stars, the Melchizedek began his mission to reveal to Amdon the revelation of truth, the reality of one God. He turned to Amdon and said, [93:2.3] *El Elyon the Most High is the divine creator of the stars, of the firmament even of this very earth on which we live, and he is also the Supreme God of the heaven.* ³ In a few years, Melchizedek had gathered around himself a group of believers he called his disciples that later formed the nucleus that eventually became the foundation for the city of Salem. He known throughout Palestine as the Priest of El Elyon the Most High, and as the Sage of Salem; Salem was later called Jebus and evolved into Jerusalem.

In his appearance, the Melchizedek looked like the blended Nodites and Sumerian people. He had reached almost six feet in height. He was able to speak the Chaldean language, plus several other languages. He dressed as the Canaanites priests except, he wore an emblem with three concentric circles on his breast. Although the Melchizedek lived as the men of his time, he never married, nor was he allowed to leave offspring on our planet. His physical body resembled that of the human male, but in reality, more like those specially constructed bodies that the 100 materialized members of Prince Caligastia's staff, except the Melchizedek did not carry the life plasma of any human race. Nor did he have the Tree of Life to sustain him. If he stayed for any prolonged period on earth, his physical mechanism would deteriorate; therefore, he terminated his mission in 94 years before his material body began to decline.

As the years passed, Melchizedek built his schools at Salem. He patterned them after the system developed by the old Shethite priests of the second Garden. He taught his students the simple essential truth about God, and he didn't complicate things. To the ranks and files of his followers, Edentia was the heaven of the Most High God. But to the members of the Katro family whom he lived with for over 30 years, Melchizedek taught many of the higher truths, and that family taught them to their offspring even to the days of their famous descendant, Moses. (The teachings were handed down from his father and mother's side). The Melchizedek taught his followers all that he thought they could grasp and assimilate. Today, many religious ideas about heaven, earth, God, and angels not far removed from the teachings of the Melchizedek. This great teacher based everything on the one God, a universe deity, a heavenly Creator, a Divine Father. He stressed in his teachings the coming of a Divine Son in the flesh just as he had come, only this Son would be born of a woman; and that is why many teachers later emphasize that Jesus was a priest, forever after the order of Melchizedek.

The Melchizedek came to prepare the way and set the monotheistic stage for the bestowal of an actual Paradise Son of the one God, whom the Melchizedek so vividly portrayed as the Father of all. He later presented to Abraham a God who would accept the man on the simple terms of personal faith. When Michael appeared on earth as Jesus Christ, he confirmed all that Melchizedek taught concerning the Paradise Father.

The Salem Religion

Ceremonies of the Salem worshipers were very simple. Every member who signed or marked the clay tablet of the Melchizedek church must commit to and uphold to the following beliefs:

1. I believe in El Elyon the Most High God, the only universe Father and creator of all things.
2. I accept the Melchizedek covenant with the Most High, which bestows the favor of God on faith, not on sacrifices and burnt offerings.
3. I promise to obey the seven commandments of the Melchizedek, to tell this good news of this covenant with the Most High to all man.

That was the entire creed of the colony; yet even that simple declaring was too much and too advanced for the men and women of that period. They couldn't grasp the idea of receiving divine favor for nothing; by faith only was more than they could handle. The belief that humans were born under the forfeiture of the gods deeply imbued into the fabric of their minds. They have been offering sacrifices to the priests too long to understand the good news that salvation, divine favor, was a gift from God to all who would believe. This atonement of sacrifice for God's favor was the same concept that was carried over to the early Christian religion by Paul. God loves his creation and doesn't need someone to be murdered to forgive us for our sins. We are forgiven when we obey His will. That takes nothing from Jesus—he came to show the way. The Melchizedek said that Abraham believed halfheartedly, and even that looked upon as righteousness. The seven commandments that were advocated by the Melchizedek modeled after the ancient Dalamatia's supreme law that was similar to the seven commands taught in the first and second Garden. The Seven Laws of the Salem religion were:

1. You shall not serve any God, but the Most High Creator of heaven and earth.
2. You should not doubt that faith is the only requirement for eternal salvation.
3. You shall not bear false witness.
4. You shall not kill.
5. You shall not steal.
6. You shall not commit adultery.
7. You shall not show disrespect to your parents or elders.

No sacrifices were allowed within the colony, but the Melchizedek knew how difficult it was to stop long established traditions and customs suddenly; so he wisely offered the people a substitute, a sacrament of bread and wine in place of the older sacrifice of flesh and blood. The Urantia Book, page 1018 states: "Melchizedek king of Salem, brought forth bread and wine." But even this was not wholly successful. The different tribes all had auxiliary centers that they maintained on the outskirts of Salem where they continued to offer burnt offerings.

Abraham himself resorted to this barbarous practice after he conquered the Chedorlaomer. He didn't feel entirely at ease until he had offered the traditional sacrifice, but Melchizedek never entirely eradicated the propensity of his followers to offer burnt sacrifices, not even Abraham.

Like Jesus, the Melchizedek had a one-track mind the fulfillment of his bestowal mission. He did not attempt to change the mores of his environment, nor did he try to change the habits of the world. He came to achieve two things: to keep the truth alive on our planet of the one God and prepare the way for the mortal incarnation of a Paradise Son of the universal Father.

[93:4.16] *Melchizedek taught elementary revealed truth at Salem for ninety-four years, and during this time Abraham attended the Salem school three different times. He finally became a convert to the Salem teachings, becoming one of Melchizedek's most brilliant pupils and chief supporters.* ⁴

The Selecting of Abraham

Melchizedek mentioned in his writings that it might be erroneous to speak of a "chosen people," but it is not a mistake to talk of Abraham as a chosen individual. These Higher Beings did rely on Abraham to keep a flame going of one God as opposed to plural deities.

Palestine chosen for the Machiventa activities, because of the desire to contact a human family that had the potential for leadership. During the time of the Melchizedek incarnation, there were equally favorable people among other races of humankind. But these places were not suitable for the appearance of Christ as on the eastern shore of the Mediterranean Sea. Palestine chosen because it was centrally located as far as trade, travel and the civilization of the world were concerned.

For years, the Melchizedek Receivers tell us that they had been observing the ancestors of Abraham, and they were confident that in certain generations they could expect offspring that were intelligent, initiative, sagacious and sincere. The children of Terah, Abraham's father, met these requirements in every way. Terah had two sons, Abraham and Nahor.

Terah and his entire family were lukewarm to the Salem religion preached in Chaldea. They learned of the Melchizedek teachings through the preaching of Ovid, a Phoenician who went through Ur proclaiming the Salem doctrine. The Terah family had left Ur with the intentions, of going to Salem, but Nahor, Abraham's brother, persuaded them to stay at Haran for some time before going to Palestine. Nahor had never met the Melchizedek and, in fact, half-heartedly believed in the Salem teachings. It was quite a while after Abraham's family arrived in Palestine before they were willing to destroy all the household gods they had brought with them and accept the one God of Salem.

A few weeks after this incident occurred, Abraham's father, Terah, died. Melchizedek sent one of his students, Jaram, a Hittite, to deliver this message to Abraham and his brother. "Come to Salem, where you shall hear our teachings of the truth of the eternal Creator, and through the enlightened offspring of you and your brothers, shall the world be blessed," The Urantia Book, paper 93, section 5, paragraph 5. Nahor did not truly accept the Melchizedek gospel, and he stayed behind and built a strong city-state that bore his name. Lot, Abraham's nephew, decided to go with him to Salem instead.

Upon arriving at Salem, Abraham and Lot chose a hilly stronghold near the city of Salem where they could defend themselves against the many surprises attracts of northern raiders. During this time, the Hittites, Assyrian, Philistines and other groups were continually raiding the tribes of central and southern Palestine. Still, from their stronghold in the hills, Abraham and Lot made many visits to Salem.

Soon after they had established themselves near Salem, Abraham and his nephew, Lot, traveled to the Valley of the Nile to obtain food supplies, as there was a drought in Palestine at that time. During his short journey to Egypt, Abraham learned that a distant relative was serving on the Egyptian throne as the commander of two successful expeditions for the king. At the end of his journey, Abraham and his wife, Sarah, were living at the king's court; but before leaving Egypt, his relative shared some of the spoils of his successful military campaigns. Abraham had to force himself to give up the honors of the Egyptian court and return to the spiritual work sponsored by the Machiventa.

The Melchizedek was revered even in Egypt, and when the full story told about the Melchizedek to the Pharaoh, he strongly advised Abraham to return to Salem and fulfill his vow to Salem. Abraham had high ambitions, and on the way back from Egypt, he talked to Lot about his plans to conquer all of Canaan and bring its people under the control of Salem. But Lot was more inclined to business; and after they had a little disagreement, Lot went to Sodom to get involved in trading and animal husbandry. He didn't care much for the military or the herder's life.

When Abraham returned to Salem with his family, he began to work on perfecting his military plans. He was soon recognized as ruler of the Salem area and had united in alliance with seven neighboring tribes. The Melchizedek had a difficult time restraining Abraham, who was all fired-up with zeal to go and round up all the nearby tribes with a sword that they might more readily accept the knowledge of the Salem truth.

But Melchizedek had always maintained a peaceful relationship with the surrounding tribes. He was not militant and was never attacked by any of the armies as they moved to and fro. He was all for Abraham developing a strategy for the defense of Salem, but he would not approve of Abraham's eager desire to conquer; Abraham and Melchizedek had a friendly relationship. So, Abraham went to Hebron to establish his military capital.

Because of his close connection with Melchizedek, and the notoriety of Melchizedek, Abraham possessed an advantage over the surrounding petty kings; they all revered the Melchizedek and feared Abraham. He knew of their fear and waited for an opportunity to attack his neighbors. His chance came when some of those rulers were assumed to have raided the property of his nephew Lot, who lived in Sodom. After hearing about the raid on his nephew, Abraham, and his army of about 4,000 attacked the rulers of those small cities.

When Melchizedek found out about Abraham's intention to go to war, he tried to dissuade him but got caught up with his former disciple's victorious return from the battle. Abraham proclaimed that the God of Salem gave him his victory and insisted on giving a tenth of his spoils to the Salem treasury. The other 90 percent moved to his capital, Hebron. After his battle with Siddim, Abraham became ruler of the second federation of 11 tribes; he not only paid tithes to Melchizedek, but he made sure that others in the vicinity did the same. Abraham's political dealings with the King of Sodom, and with the fear that he generally held for Abraham, resulted in the King of Sodom and others joining the Hebron military confederation; Abraham was well on his way to establishing a powerful state in Palestine.

Melchizedek Covenant with Abraham

Abraham envisioned the conquering of all, of Canaan. But his determination was weakened because the Melchizedek would not sanction his plans; Abraham gave it much thought and decided to go on with his policies, but then suddenly a thought occurred to him that he had no son to succeed him as ruler of his purpose empire. It began to trouble him. He arranged a meeting with Melchizedek; and it was during these proceedings that the Priest of Salem, the visible Son of God, induced Abraham to abandon his desire for material conquest and earthly rule in favor of the spiritual concepts of the kingdom of heaven. So, Melchizedek made an official agreement with Abraham in Salem [93:6.3]. *Said he to Abraham: "Look up to the heaven and number the stars if you are able, so numerous will your seed be. And Abraham believed Melchizedek, "and it was counted to him as righteousness." And then Melchizedek told Abraham the story of the future occupation of Canaan by his offspring after their sojourn in Egypt.*

This covenant of Melchizedek with Abraham represents the great Urantian agreement between divinity and humanity whereby God agrees to do everything; man only agrees to believe God's promises and follow his instructions. Heretofore it had been believed that salvation could be secured only by works — sacrifices and offerings; now, Melchizedek again brought to Urantia the good news that salvation, favor with God, is to be had by faith. But this gospel of simple faith in God was too advanced; the Semitic tribesmen subsequently preferred to go back to the older sacrifices and atonement for sin by the shedding of blood. ⁵

It wasn't long after he agreed to the covenant with the Melchizedek, that Abraham's son, Isaac, was born as the Melchizedek had promised. Abraham took the agreement he made with Melchizedek very seriously. He went to Salem to have it put in writing, and it was at this formal acceptance of the covenant that he officially changed his name from Abram to that of Abraham.

Following Abraham's public surrender of his ambition for the more extensive plans of the Melchizedek, three celestial beings appeared to him on the planes of Mamre. The writer of The Urantia Book, states that this was a factual appearance, but the association of those celestial beings to the destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah was a fabrication; it was a natural disaster. The legend was an indication of how immoral and unethical the people were.

After the completion of the Salem Covenant between Melchizedek and Abraham, the reconciliation between them was final. Abraham returned to Salem and resumed his military leadership of the Salem colony, which at its height, carried 100,000 tithes payers on the role of the Melchizedek brotherhood. Abraham improved the temple and provided new tents for the entire school. He did a great job in the overall improvement of the functioning of Salem. He was a shrewd businessman, a wealthy man for his times; but he was also sincere and believed Machiventa Melchizedek.

Those Higher Beings mentioned in their writings that we understand little of the difficulty to forge the truth during those earlier days, it is extremely easy for early humans to lose interest in new doctrines from one generation to another. There was always the tendency for the new doctrines to become absorbed into the old body of religious teachings and magical practices. Old evolutionary beliefs always contaminated a new revelation.

The Departure of Melchizedek

Right after the destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah, Machiventa Melchizedek decided to end his emergency bestowal on our planet earth. One of the main reasons the Melchizedek agreed to terminate his journey in the flesh was the tendency of the surrounding tribes to regard him as a demigod. They looked upon him as a supernatural being, which he was. They showed him unnecessary reverence with superstitious fear. He also wanted to leave in enough time before Abraham's death so that the truth of the one God would become firmly established in the minds of his followers.

As the story goes, one night Melchizedek retired to his tent at Salem after telling his friends good night and when they called upon him the next morning, he was not there.

It was difficult for Abraham to accept Melchizedek's sudden disappearance. He had warned his followers that one day he would return from whence he had come, but they were not able to cope with the loss of this wonderful leader. The excellent organization that was built at Salem almost disappeared, though the tradition of these days is what Moses built upon when he led the Hebrew slaves out of Egypt. The loss of Melchizedek brought sadness over Abraham that he never really overcame. He had abandoned Hebron when he gave up the idea of building a material kingdom; now, with the loss of his great spiritual leader, he had less ambition to create a spiritual one. He left Salem and went south to be near his interests in Gerar.

It wasn't long before Abraham overcame his despair, and he soon took up his mission as successor of Melchizedek. Shortly after his recovery, he made converts among the Philistines, and he signed a treaty with the Abimelech people. During the closing years of his life, he returned to Hebron, the place of his earlier activities with the Melchizedek. Abraham's last act was to send several of his servants to the city of his brother, Nahor, on the border of Mesopotamia, to escort a woman of his people as a wife for his son, Isaac. It was the custom of Abraham's people to marry their cousins. Abraham died with confidence in his faith in God that he learned from Melchizedek in the vanished school of Salem.

The teachings of Melchizedek were nebulous for the next generations; within 500 years, they regarded the whole story as a myth. Although Isaac had clung to his father's teachings and fostered the gospel of the Salem colony, it was harder for Jacob (Isaac's son), to grasp the significance of those traditions. Joseph (Jacob's son) was a firm believer in the teachings of Melchizedek. His belief was one of the main reasons his brother called him a dreamer. Joseph's high regard in Egypt was due to the memory of his great-grandfather, Abraham. In fact, Joseph was offered the military command of the Egyptian armies because of his belief in the teachings of the Melchizedek, but he declined the position and, instead, elected to serve as civil administrator. He believed he could advance the course of heaven in this position.

Melchizedek's teachings were, replete so much so that the Hebrew priests found those records fantastic and almost impossible to believe. Quite a few of these priests had some understanding of the teachings until the time of the mass editing of the Old Testament records in Babylon. For example, when the Old Testament mentioned a conversation between Abraham and God, it was, in reality, a conversation between the Melchizedek and Abraham. Those Hebrew scribes regarded the term Melchizedek as synonymous with God; even the many contacts between Abraham, Sarah and "the angels of the Lord" were referring to their many meetings with Melchizedek. Those Higher Beings say the narratives of Isaac, Jacob and Joseph are much more reliable than those about Abraham, even though they contain many diversions from the facts, alterations

made were purposely, but others unintentional at the time of the compilation of those records by the Hebrew priests during the Babylonian captivity.

All of Abraham's property went to Isaac, the son of Sarah, the status wife. Abraham was not as old as the records say, and his wife Sarah was much younger than the Bible claims she was. Their age was deliberately altered to claim the subsequent alleged miraculous birth of Isaac.

During the time of the Babylonian captivity, the national ego of the Jewish people was very depressed. To ease the pains of their guilty feelings of national inferiority, they went to the other extreme of national and racial egotism, where they distorted and perverted their tradition with the intent of exalting themselves as chosen people of God above all races. They carefully edited all of their records to raise their national leaders high above all other persons, even to Melchizedek himself. As such, the Hebrew scribes destroyed all the documents about the meetings of Abraham and Melchizedek, keeping only information about the Battle of Siddim, which they felt reflected great honor upon Abraham. As a young man, I often wondered why the Bible was so confusing in some places. Now I know.

In losing the teachings of the Melchizedek, they also lost the information about an emergency Son that was to come. They lost sight of the nature of the Melchizedek mission so thoroughly and completely that very few of their progeny were able or willing to recognize or accept Michael when he appeared on our planet as Jesus Christ, as the Melchizedek had foretold. Those Higher Beings mentioned in their writings that there was one writer of the book of Hebrews who understood the mission of the Melchizedek he wrote: [93:9.11] But one of the writers of the Book of Hebrews understood the mission of Melchizedek, for it is written: "This Melchizedek, priest of the Most High, was also king of peace; without father, without mother, without pedigree, having neither beginning of days nor end of life but made like a Son of God, he abides a priest continually." This writer designated Melchizedek as a type of the later bestowal of Michael, affirming that Jesus was "a minister forever on the order of Melchizedek." While this comparison was not altogether fortunate, it was literally true that Christ did receive provisional title to Urantia "upon the orders of the twelve Melchizedek receivers" on duty at the time of his world bestowal. See [Hebrews 7:3].

During the years of Machiventa incarnation, the Urantia Melchizedek Receivers functioned as 11. When Machiventa realized his mission as emergency Son was finished, he signaled this fact to his 11 associates, and they immediately made ready the procedure whereby he was to be released from the flesh and safely restored to his original Melchizedek status. And on the third day, after his disappearance from Salem, he appeared among his 11 fellows of the Urantia assignment and resumed his interrupted career as one of the planetary receivers of 606 (earth) of Satania (the administration system which our planet belongs). But the Melchizedek continued to show interest in the affairs of those men, women, and descendants who believed in his teachings when he was in the flesh. The descendants of Abraham, through Isaac as his offspring intermarried with the Kenites, who were the only line which continued to nourish any clear concept of the Salem teachings. Those Super Beings write that this same Melchizedek continued to collaborate throughout the 19 centuries with the many prophets and seers, trying to keep alive the truth of Salem until the time of the appearance of Christ. The Hebrew scribes claimed that it was God who appeared to those prophets and seers, while all the time it was the Melchizedek, we know now that God will not make an appearance to anyone; we should know by now that God is infinity. Those Jewish scribes used God so that others would look upon their race as a miraculous people.

Chapter 9

Yahweh, God of the Hebrews

In his limited understanding of deity, man first included all the gods into his tribal deity. Then he subordinated all foreign gods to his tribal deity, and he eventually eliminated all but the supreme, the God of all. The Jews synthesized all their gods into the concept of the Lord God of Israel. As man expanded his consciousness, so did his gods evolve. These ideas of monotheism matured all over the world not long after the appearance of Melchizedek at Salem in Palestine. The Melchizedek concept of deity was not like that of the evolutionary philosophy of inclusion, subordination, and exclusion; the Melchizedek understanding of deity was based exclusively on creative power, and very soon, influenced the highest concepts of Mesopotamia, India, and Egypt.

The Melchizedek religion is honored as a tradition by the Kenites, plus several other Canaanite tribes. And was one of the reasons for the Melchizedek incarnation that a religion of one God should be nourished to prepare the way for the earthly manifestation of a Son of the one God. Christ could hardly come to earth until a people existed that believed in a Universal Father to whom he could appear.

The religion of Salem continued among the Kenites in Palestine as their creed was later adopted by the Hebrews, who were first influenced by the Egyptian's moral teachings than by Babylonian theological thoughts and, lastly, as Iranian conceptions of good and evil. In short, the Hebrew religion based on the covenant between Melchizedek and Abraham. To the Hebrews, it was the evolutionary outgrowth of many unique situational circumstances; culturally, it has borrowed freely from the religious, morality and philosophy of the entire Levant. In other words, it was through the Hebrew religion that most of the morality and spiritual thoughts of Egypt, Mesopotamia, and Iran transmitted to the Occidental people.

Deity Concepts among the Semites

Those early Semites looked upon everything as being indwelt by a spirit. They imagined the spirit in the animals, vegetables, and water and air a whole pantheon of spirits to be feared and worshiped. The teachings of Melchizedek about a universal Creator never really destroyed the belief in the low spirits or nature gods. The way things moved, acted or performed on their own caused them to visualize in their limited states of consciousness that something was in those particular things to cause them to act, which they contributed to a spirit within; when the body died, that spirit that possessed the body took leave of that body. As their consciousness expanded somewhat, they later believed that the soul went off to its happy hunting grounds or heaven. However, the Hebrew progression from polytheism to henotheism to monotheism was not an unbroken chain of events; they experienced retrogression in the evolution of their deity concepts. In any one eon there were many different concepts of God among many groups of Semite, and to avoid confusion, those Higher Beings listed these various deities as they pertained to the evolution of the Jewish theology:

[96:1.3] 1. Yahweh was the god of the southern Palestinian tribes, who associated this concept of deity with Mount Horeb, the Sinai volcano. Yahweh was merely one of the hundreds and thousands of nature gods which held the attention and claimed the worship of the Semitic tribes and peoples.

[96:1.4] 2. El Elyon. For centuries after Melchizedek's sojourn at Salem, his doctrine of deity persisted in various versions but was generally connoted by the term El Elyon, the Most High God of heaven. Many Semites, including the immediate descendants of Abraham, at various times, worshiped both Yahweh and El Elyon.

[96:1.5] 3. El Shaddai. It is difficult to explain what El Shaddai stood for. This idea of God was a composite derived from the teachings of Amenemope's Book of Wisdom modified by Akhenaton's doctrine of Aton and further influenced by Melchizedek's teachings embodied in the concept of El Elyon. But as the concept of El Shaddai permeated the Hebrew mind, it became thoroughly colored with the Yahweh beliefs of the desert.

One of the dominant ideas of the religion of this era was the Egyptian concept of divine Providence, the teaching that material prosperity was a reward for serving El Shaddai.

[96:1.6] 4. El. Amid all this confusion of terminology and haziness of concept, many devout believers sincerely endeavored to worship all of these evolving ideas of divinity, and there grew up the practice of referring to this composite deity as El. And this term included still others of the Bedouin nature gods.

[96:1.7] 5. Elohim. In Kish and Ur there long, persisted Sumerian-Chaldean groups who taught a three-in-one God concept founded on the traditions of the days of Adam and Melchizedek. This doctrine was carried to Egypt, where this Trinity was worshiped under the name of Elohim, or in the singular as Eloah. The philosophic circles of Egypt and later Alexandrian teachers of Hebraic extraction taught this unity of pluralistic Gods, and many of Moses' advisers at the time of the exodus believed in this Trinity. But the concept of the trinitarian Elohim never became a real part of Hebrew theology until after they had come under the political influence of the Babylonians.

[96:1.8] 6. Sundry names. The Semites disliked to speak the name of their deity, and they therefore resorted to numerous appellations from time to time, such as: The Spirit of God, The Lord, The Angel of the Lord, The Almighty, The Holy One, The Most High, Adonai, The Ancient of Days, The Lord God of Israel, The Creator of Heaven and Earth, Kyrios, Jah, The Lord of Hosts, and The Father in Heaven.'

Jehovah is a name which in recent times has been adopted to identify the entire concept of Yahweh, which evolved into the long Hebrew experience. But the name Jehovah did not come into use until 1,500 years after the death of Jesus.

Until 2,000 years ago, Mount Sinai was somewhat of an active volcano, and it had occasional eruptions even as late as the Israelite's journey through that region many years ago. The fire and smoke together with thunderous explosions that caused the eruptions of this volcanic mountain impressed and awed the Bedouins who were occupying the surrounding area, and they greatly feared Yahweh. This spirit of Mount Hored later became the god of the Hebrew Semites, and they believed him to be supreme over all other gods.

Several other cultures recognized Yahweh; the Canaanites long revered Yahweh; the Kenites loosely believed in Yahweh and the Syrians, but none stayed with Yahweh as long as the Hebrews. The concept of Yahweh had gone through the most development of all the mortal ideas of

God. Its progressive revolution can only be matched to that of the Buddha concepts in Asia, which led to the concept of the Universal Absolute as the idea of Yahweh finally led to the Universal Father. And it must be stated here as a historical fact that the Jews changed their view of deity from the tribal god of Mount Horeb to the loving and merciful Creator of later times. They did not change His name; they continued to call this evolving concept of deity Yahweh.

The Semites in the eastern part of Palestine were well organized and well-trained leaders who invaded the eastern area of the Fertile Crescent; there, they united with the Babylonians. The Chaldeans near Ur were one of the most advanced of the Eastern Semites. The Phoenicians were a well-mixed race of Semites, a well-organized and somewhat superior group who ruled the western Mediterranean Coast. As far as race goes, the Semites were the most mixed race of all the earth people with hereditary genes from almost all nine of the planetary races. This is where the Nodites almost disappeared in the Middle East as they were swallowed up by many different races.

The Arabians fought their way over and over into the northern Promise Land that “flowed with milk and honey,” they were prevented by the better organized and more highly civilized northern Semites and Hittites. Later, when there was an unusually harsh famine, these roving groups of Bedouins entered Egypt in large numbers as contract laborers on the Egyptian public works. Not long after, they found themselves undergoing the hideous experience of enslavement, as the hard-daily toil of the common oppressed subjugated laborers of the Valley of the Nile.

After the days of Melchizedek and Abraham, certain tribes of Semites were called the Children of Israel and later the Hebrew Jews “The Chosen People.” Abraham was not the racial father of all the Hebrews, nor was he the progenitor of all Bedouin Semites who was held captive in Egypt. It is true that Abraham's offspring coming out of Egypt formed the nucleus of the Jewish people, but the majority of the men and women who incorporated into the ranks of the Israelites were never slaves nor out of Egypt. (This is where I believe many of the descendants of the Nodites race became Hebrews, especially the belligerent ones, descendants of the days of Babel. Their descendants are the ones I believe were responsible for killing Jesus Christ.) They were a group of nomads who chose to follow the leadership of Moses.

The Melchizedek teachings about El Elyon the Most High and the covenant of divine favor through faith was all but forgotten by the Semites enslaved in Egypt, who later formed the Hebrew nation. It's written in The Urantia Book, at one time more than 100 different Arabian tribes worshiped Yahweh. And now, except for a slight trace of the concept of Melchizedek El Elyon, which continued among the more educated classes of Egypt, including the mixed Hebrews and Egyptian stock, the religion of the rank and file of the Hebrew slaves was a modified form of the old Yahweh ritual of magic and sacrifice.

The Matchless Moses

The start of the evolution of the Hebrews concepts of a Supreme Creator dates to the time the Semites obtained their freedom from the fetter of Egypt under the excellent leadership, teacher, and organizer, Moses. Moses' mother was of the royal family of Egypt; his father was a Semitic liaison officer between the government and the Bedouin's captives. Moses possessed character and quality that came from excellent racial sources; his ancestors were blended, so it was impossible to classify him in any racial group. The Higher Beings believe that if Moses had not been of this type, he would never have shown that incredible versatility and adaptability, which enabled him to control such a diversified group and eventually became associated with those Bedouin Semites who later fled from Egypt to the Arabian Desert under Moses' leadership.

Despite the enticement Egypt had to offer him, Moses decided to cast his lot with his father's people. At the time, the great organizer was making his plans for the freedom of his father's people. The Bedouin captives hardly had a religion that was worthy of calling it a religion and they were without a valid concept of God and were without hope.

No leader had ever undertaken to uplift a sadder or dejected, ignorant group of human beings as Moses had taken upon himself. Although these slaves carried in their genes the latent possibilities of development, there were also enough educated leaders who Moses so wisely taught in preparation for the day of the revolt. These somewhat intelligent men employed as native overseers for their people. They received some education due to the influence Moses had with Egyptian rulers.

Moses tried to negotiate for the freedom of his father's people diplomatically. For example, he and his brother agreed with the king of Egypt, where they were granted permission to leave the Valley of the Nile peacefully with the slaves to the Arabian Desert. They were to receive a modest payment of money and goods in appreciation for their long service in Egypt. Moses and the slaves agreed with the Pharaoh not to join in an alliance against Egypt. The king later repudiated their freedom, giving as his excuse that his spies had discovered disloyalty among the Bedouin slaves. He claimed they wanted the freedom to go into the desert and organize the Nomads against Egypt for revenge. Moses was dauntless; he bided his time, and in less than one year, the Egyptian's military force was busy resisting simultaneous violent attacks from Libyan troops from the south. The Greek navy was invading from the north. Moses' opportunity to lead his father's people out of Egypt in a spectacular night flight. This escape to freedom was carefully planned and skillfully carried out. They were successful and pursued by the Pharaoh and a small band of Egyptians. But all fell before the fugitive's defenses, which yielded much booty.

The Proclamation of Yahweh

[96:4.1] *The evolution and elevation of the Mosaic teaching has influenced almost one-half of all the world's people, and still does even in the twentieth century. While Moses comprehended the more advanced Egyptian religious philosophy, the Bedouin slaves knew little about such teachings, but they had never entirely forgotten the god of Mount Hored, whom their ancestors called Yahweh.*

Moses had heard of the teachings of Machiventa Melchizedek from his father and his mother, their commonness of religious belief being the explanation for the unusual union between a woman of royal blood and a man from a captive race. Moses' father-in-law was a Kenites worshiper of El Elyon, but the emancipator's parents were believers in El Shaddai. Moses thus, was educated as an El Shaddaist; through the influence of his father-in-law, he became an El Elyonist; and by the time of Hebrew encampment about Mount Sinai after the flight from Egypt, he had formulated a new and enlarged concept of deity (derived from all his former beliefs), which he wisely decided to proclaim to his people as an expanded concept of their olden tribal god, Yahweh.

Moses had endeavored to teach these Bedouins the ideas of El Elyon, but before leaving Egypt, he became convinced that they would never fully comprehend this doctrine. Therefore, he deliberately determined upon the compromise adoption of their tribal god of the desert as the one and only god of his followers. Moses did not specifically teach that other peoples and nations might not have other gods, but he did resolutely maintain that Yahweh was overall, especially to the Hebrew. But always was he plagued by the awkward predicament of trying to present his new

and higher idea of deity to these ignorant slaves under the guise of the ancient term Yahweh, which had always symbolized the golden calf of the Bedouin tribes.

The fact that Yahweh was the god of the fleeing Hebrews explains why they tarried so long before the holy mountain of Sinai, and why they there received the Ten Commandments, which Moses promulgated in the name of Yahweh, the god of Horeb. During this lengthy sojourn before Sinai, the religious ceremonials of the new evolving Hebrew worship were further perfected.

It does not appear that Moses would ever have succeeded in the establishment of his somewhat advanced ceremonial worship and in keeping his followers intact for a quarter of a century had it not been for the violent eruption of Horeb during the third week of their worshipful sojourn at its base. "The mountain of Yahweh was consumed in fire, and the smoke ascended like the smoke of a furnace, and the whole mountain quaked greatly." In view of the cataclysm, it is not surprising that Moses could impress upon his brethren that their God was "mighty, terrible, a devouring fire, fearful and all-powerful."

Moses proclaimed that Yahweh was the Lord God of Israel, who had singled out the Hebrew as his chosen people; he was building a new nation, and he wisely nationalized his religious teachings, telling his followers that Yahweh was a hard taskmaster, a "Jealous God." But nonetheless, he sought to enlarge their concept of divinity when he taught them Yahweh was the "God of the spirit of all flesh" and when he said, "The eternal God is your refuge and underneath is the everlasting arms." Moses taught that Yahweh was a covenant-keeping God: that he "Will not forsake you, neither destroy you, nor forget the covenant of your fathers because the Lord loves you and will not forget the oath by which he swore to your fathers."

Moses made a heroic effort to uplift Yahweh to the dignity of the supreme deity when he presented him as the "God of truth and without iniquity, just and right in all his ways." And yet, despite this exalted teaching, the limited understanding of his followers made it necessary to speak of God as being in man's image, as being subject to fits of anger, wrath, and severity, even that he was vengeful and easily influenced by man's conduct.

Under the teachings of Moses, this tribal nature god, Yahweh, became the Lord God of Israel, who followed them through the wilderness and even into exile, where he presently was conceived as the God of all people. The later captivity that enslaved the Jews in Babylon finally liberated the evolving concept of Yahweh to assume the monotheistic role of the God of all nations.

The most unique and amazing feature of the religious history of the Hebrews concerns this continuous evolution of the concept of deity from the primitive god of Mount Horeb up through the teachings of their successive spiritual leaders to the high level of development depicted in the deity doctrines of the Isaiah, who proclaimed that magnificent concept of the loving and merciful Creator Father.²

Teachings of Moses

Moses was the most important individual world teacher between the time of Melchizedek and Jesus. He tried to introduce many reforms in his people, the Israelites, but there are no records. In the short span of one man's life, he led the confused multitudes of so-called Hebrews out of slavery, and as they roamed, he laid the foundation for the birth of a nation and perpetuated a race. There is very little on record about this great man because the Hebrews had no written language at the time of the exodus from Egypt.

The record of the times and actions of Moses came from traditions, word-of-mouth they had no written language for a 1,000 years after the death of the great leader. One can only imagine the different stories that were told over a period of 1,000 years. I am sure the parting of the Red Sea was one of extended imagination. Continuing, Moses made many religious advances above that of the Egyptian and surrounding Levantine tribes; his improvements were due to the Kenites tradition of the teachings of the times of Melchizedek. Without the teachings of the Melchizedek and Abraham, the Hebrews would have come out of Egypt in hopeless darkness. Moses, along with his father-in-law, Jethro, gleaned the residue of the tradition of the days of Melchizedek. Those teachings combined with the instructions of the Egyptians, guided Moses in his creation of an improved religion and ritual for the Israelites, as Moses was a good organizer and leader. He selected the best of the beliefs and mores of Egypt and Palestine; and by blending these practice along with the tradition of the Melchizedek teachings, he was able to put together a system of formal worship for the Hebrews.

Moses believed in the benevolent guidance of God; he became thoroughly familiar with the doctrine about supernatural control of the Nile and other events. He had a grand vision of God; and he was frank when he taught the Hebrews that if they obeyed God, He would love them, bless them and multiply them. He would increase the fruits of their womb, the fruit of the land, such as corn, wine, oils and their flocks. Moses taught them that they would prosper above all people, and the Lord God would take away from them all sickness, and they would experience none of the evil diseases of Egypt. Those Higher Beings said it was truly pitiful to watch this great mind trying to advance his sublime concept of El Elyon, the Most High, to a level the ignorant and illiterate Hebrews could comprehend them. Because Moses feared to talk to them about the mercy of God, he spoke to them in this manner: [96:5.6] *The Lord your God is God of all Gods, and Lord of Lords, a great God mighty and terrible God, who regard not man.* "And he tried to control the turbulent groups of people by declaring, *"Your God kills when you disobey him; he heals and give life when you obey Him."* Moses taught these tribes that they would become God chosen only on the condition that they "kept all his commandments and obeyed all his statutes." ³

But Moses couldn't teach those illiterate Hebrews about the kind and merciful Father in heaven that Jesus proclaimed; they would have run him out of town because they were used to a god that was hard to please. There was even a time when they would sacrifice their firstborn sons to please this god.

Although he tried to present a universal and beneficent deity to the children of Israel, overall, their concept of God was not much better than the tribal gods of the surrounding people. The Hebrew concept of God was primitive and crude; when Moses passed on, those Bedouins tribes reverted to the old Simi-barbaric ideas of their gods of Horeb and the desert. The grander vision of God which Moses did teach to his leader, was soon lost and most of the people returned to the worship of their fetish golden calves, the Palestine herdsman's symbol of Yahweh. In short, after Moses' death, the lofty concept of Yahweh deteriorated rapidly. Joshua, who took over the leadership of Israel, continued to teach the Mosaic tradition of an all-wise beneficent and almighty God, but the people returned to the old desert concepts of Yahweh. This backward drift of the ideas of deity continued to increase throughout the successive rule of the various so-called judges.

The astounding personality of Moses helped to keep the inspirations of an enlarged concept of God alive in the hearts of his followers; after they reached the fertile land of Palestine, and they changed from nomadic herders into more settled farmers. This evolution of their

environment changed their everyday habits and affected how they perceived their Yahweh. During these days, the Hebrews lost almost all sight of Moses' teachings. They almost forgot all concepts of monotheism, and nearly lost their opportunity of becoming the people who would serve as an important link in the spiritual evolution of the earth. The group who preserved the Melchizedek teachings of one God, until the time came for the incarnation on earth of a Bestowal Son of that Father of all.

Joshua tried desperately to hold the concept of a supreme Yahweh in the mind of his people proclaiming, "As I was with Moses so will I be with you; I will not fail you nor forsake you." (The Urantia Book paper 96 section 6, paragraph 3). He thought it necessary to preach a strict gospel to his non-believing people, who were too willing to go back to their old beliefs but unwilling to go forward in the religion of faith and righteousness. The burden of Joshua's teachings became: "Yahweh is a holy God; he is a jealous God; he will not forgive your transgressions or your sin." The highest concept of this age pictured Yahweh as a "God of power, judgment, and justice." (The Urantia Book, paper 96, section 6, paragraph 3).

Now, under the leadership of sheiks and priests, the Hebrews became somewhat established in Palestine. They returned to their old benighted ways of the desert, imbued with the less advanced Canaanites' religious practices. They became sexually unrestrained, and their ideas of God fell far below the Egyptian and Mesopotamia concepts that were kept by specific surviving Salem groups, which recorded in some of the Psalms and the so-called Book of Job.

Those Higher Beings mentioned that the Psalms is the work of scores of authors, and Egyptians and Mesopotamia teachers wrote many. During those days when the Levant worshiped nature gods, there were still quite a few people who believed in the supremacy of El Elyon the Most High. But no compilation gives such a beautiful expression of one's love for God, devotion, and inspiration as expressed in the Book of Psalms. This book is the record of varying concepts expressed by believers of the Salem religion throughout the Levant and embraces the entire period from Amenemope to Isaiah. (Amenemope was an Egyptian who taught the teachings of Melchizedek, and among other things, that God-consciousness is the primary factor which determines conduct.) In the Book of Psalms, God depicted in all states and conceptions, from the crude ideas of tribal gods to the vastly expanded ideas of the later Hebrews, where Yahweh described as a loving ruler and merciful Father. For many years now, I have had the in-depth understanding that David couldn't have written the Book of Psalms. I concluded he didn't have that intuitive understanding to express such inward devotion and inspirational feelings that were needed to write the Psalms as the Hebrews claimed. Those that wrote the Psalms were imbued with love of God. And David didn't fit that description. If we read the lofty concepts of divinity found in the compilations of Mesopotamian beliefs, we will recognize that it was around this area of Ur of Chaldea that the ideas of a real God persevered during the dark days of Palestine.

It was the Melchizedek helping the Israelites throughout the years in the background; whenever Moses spoke about the priest of the Most High who was the Melchizedek, the Jewish priests would change it to Yahweh. It is because of people like those so-called Jewish scribes who changed the records when they came across something they didn't understand and would insert their interpretation in its place, that this is one of the main reasons the records are so distorted today. Therefore I am so grateful for The Urantia Book. With the information in this book, I saw how to fit the distorted pieces together.

The truth is, there was no way our ancient ancestors could understand that the Melchizedek was helping Moses from another dimension. In fact, they could not conceive of there being such a thing as another dimension. It was not in their vocabulary. The closest they came to another dimension was Egypt's Nether World and what it meant in those days. As a matter of fact, how many people nowadays understand there is a high possibility that there are different dimensions and that we are thriving alongside other beings?

The wisdom and all-pervasiveness of God often grasped in Palestine, but seldom was his love and mercy. The Jews understanding of Yahweh was sending evil spirits to dominate the soul of his enemies, he prospered his obedient children and cursed and pronounced judgment on all others. Only in Ur, a voice sounded the mercy of God saying: "He shall pray to God and shall find favor with Him and shall see His face with joy, for God shall give to him divine righteousness" (The Urantia Book, paper 96, section 7, paragraph 7). And so the remnant, or the Salem missionaries in Mesopotamia, kept the divine light shining during the period of disorganization of the Hebrew people until the appearance of the first teachers of Israel. They never stopped as they continued to establish concept upon concept finally achieving the realization of the idea of the universal and creator Father of us all the apex of the evolution of Yahweh concepts. This Divine Light paved the way for Jesus. Today, with worldwide information available, everyone should realize that men wrote the Bible. Although much of the Bible were inspired, it's not infallible, as some seem to think; and it shows how little we know about history. (If you searched the Sumerians records of the Epic of Gilgamesh, the world's first great epic.) You will learn about the world's first great flood recorded, Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden, and the daughters of men having children by the sons of God. As mentioned, it is obvious the Jews copied this information from the Sumerian's cuneiform and Babylonian's tablets, when Judah, was captured by the Babylonian's Nebuchadnezzar in 597 B.C. The record states the Jews were under Babylonian's rule for 72 years—that is when they learned about the flood and such and altered their records.

Chapter 10

Jesus the Christ

I will not go into Jesus' early life as The Urantia Book has covered it so thoroughly starting from his birth until his death.

In The Urantia Book, there are 700 pages on the life and teachings of Jesus. At the beginning of the section on Jesus, they wrote about how the information was collected to write the pages on the life and teachings of Jesus. It states that commissions of 12 Urantia midwayers, acting under the supervision of the Melchizedeks revelatory directors, were the ones who sponsored this group of papers. A midwayer who at one time was assigned to the superhuman watch-care of the Apostle Andrew, supplied the necessary information for the papers.

But before we continue with the teachings of Jesus, let us examine a couple of Jesus' initiations. As I mentioned before, those Creator Sons must experience seven initiations before they can obtain full sovereignty of the universe they and their complementary opposites created with their many helpers. The Melchizedek, who commanded the revelatory commission and was assigned by Gabriel, proceeded to say in the first papers on Jesus, Paper 120, that he was authorized to present events that happened right before the Creator Son arrived on earth. He maintained that he was permitted to offer the following excerpts: Emmanuel charging Michael on his final bestowal or initiation, the seventh:

[120:1.1] My Creator brother, I am about to witness your seventh and final universe bestowal. Most faithfully and perfectly have you executed the six previous commissions, and I entertain no thought but that you will be equally triumphant on this your terminal sovereignty bestowal. Heretofore you have appeared on your bestowal spheres as a fully developed being of the order of your choosing. Now you are about to appear upon Urantia, the disordered and disturbed planet of your choice, not as a fully developed mortal, but as a helpless babe. This, my comrade, will be a new and untried experience for you. You are about to pay the full price of bestowal and to experience the complete enlightenment of the incarnation of a Creator in the likeness of a creature.

Throughout each of your former bestowals you have voluntarily chosen to subject yourself to the will of the three Paradise Deities and their divine inter-associations. Of the seven phases of the will of the Supreme, you have in your previous bestowals been subject to all but the personal will of your Paradise Father. Now that you have elected to be wholly subjected to your Father's will throughout your seventh bestowal, I, as the personal representative of our Father, assume the unqualified jurisdiction of your universe for the time of your incarnation.

In entering upon the Urantia bestowal, you have voluntarily divested of all extra-planetary support and special assistance such as might be rendered by any creature of your known creation. As your created sons of Nebadon are wholly dependent upon you for safe conduct throughout their universe careers, so now must you become wholly and unreservedly dependent upon your Paradise Father for safe conduct throughout the unrevealed vicissitudes of your ensuing mortal career. And when you shall have finished this bestowal experience, you will know in very truth the full meaning and the rich significance of that faith-trust which you so unvaryingly require all your creatures to master as a part of their intimate relationship with you as their local universe Creator and Father.'

When I was a young man not understanding much about the universe we live in, I often wondered why beings like angels and other Higher Beings came to be in God's heaven. I was taught there was nothing but happiness in heaven, and we had to suffer pain and sorrow here on earth. Why did those Higher Beings deserve such privileges? I had to check myself sometimes when I found myself burning with envy of Jesus. How did he become God's Favorite Son? Thoughts like these ran through my mind now and then. But after reading The Urantia Book, where I learned what these beings had to go through—thousands of years of trials and initiations—before they are qualified to maintain their status. After studying some of their problems, all thoughts relating to envy simply melted away.

We may think the Higher Beings have it easy. We, humans, are ascending sons and daughters of God, and the Higher Beings are descending Sons and Daughters of God. The Higher Beings start from the higher worlds and go through initiations on lower vibrations; some that we call Higher Beings are not perfect yet. We are reminded of Adam and Eve, or Lucifer. When we evolve into what the Higher Beings call Finaliters, we will have reached a state of consciousness far above Lucifer before he fell. That is our destiny which lies many years ahead. So you see, we are nothing but babies don't let our present existence fool you as it is not real.

Before incarnating into our world as Jesus Christ, the Son of God, he was known in the higher realms as a Creator Son of God. These Creator Sons are the ones who are responsible for the creation of those vast universes. All these Sons are known as the firstborn Sons of God, as mentioned earlier.

Bestowals of Christ Michael

The being that was responsible for seeing that we obtained this information on earth, started off by saying:

[119:0.1] *Chief of the evening stars of Nebadon (our local universe) I am assigned to Urantia by Gabriel on the mission of revealing the story of the seven bestowals of the Universe Sovereign Michael of Nebadon, and my name is Gavalia. In making this presentation, I will adhere strictly to the limitation imposed by my commission.* (Chief of the evening stars is a very high angel).

[119:1.1] It was a solemn occasion on Salvington almost one billion years ago when the assembled directors and chiefs of the universe of Nebadon heard Michael announce that his elder brother, Immanuel, would presently assume authority in Nebadon while he (Michael) would be absent on an unexplained mission. No other announcement was made about this transaction except that the farewell broadcast to the Constellation Fathers, among other instructions, said: "And for this period I place you under the care and keeping of Immanuel while I go to do the bidding of my Paradise Father. After saying his farewells, Michael, the one we knew later as Jesus Christ, vanished, and did not reappear for 20 years their time, but 100 years our time.

In all Salvington (headquarters of our local universe), none but the Divine Minister, Emmanuel, and Union of Days, knew what was taking place, (the Union of Days is another group of high spiritual Sons of God) and shared their information only with the chief executive of the universe, Gabriel the Bright and Morning Star.

All the beings on Salvington and those inhabitants of the constellation and system headquarters worlds gathered around their receiving station for universe intelligence hoping to hear some word of the whereabouts of the universe Creator Son. Not until three days after Michael's disappearance was any message of any significance received. On this day, a message was received on Salvington from the Melchizedek's sphere,

the headquarters of that order in Nebadon; it recorded the extraordinary and never-before-heard-of-message. On this day at noon, there appeared a strange Melchizedek Son on the receiving field of this world. (I would imagine this is something like our airports.) He was not of our order, but something like ours. A solitary omniaphim (higher angel) was with him who had credentials from Uversa (the headquarters world of the seventh Super universes) and presented orders addressed to our chief of staff that was from the Ancient of Days. And also in agreement with Emmanuel of Salvington, ordering that this new Melchizedek is received in our order and assigned to the emergency service of the Melchizedeks of Nebadon; and as requested, done.

And all in the records of Salvington concerning the first of Michael's bestowals. And 20 years their time 100 years earth's time, Michael's unannounced return to resume his regular universe affairs was recorded. It mentions the service of this unique Melchizedek of the emergency corps of that time.

In this section, we see that time is not the same in all parts of the universe as Einstein's law of relativity demonstrated. On the world of those Higher Beings, only 20 years had passed while Michael was away, and on earth, 100 years had elapsed. For the record, I quote this section to give a better understanding of what's here. [119:1.5] *And at noon on this day, without previous announcement and witnessed by only three of our brotherhood, this visiting Son of our order disappeared from our world just as he came, accompanied only by a solitary omniaphim; and this record is now closed with the certification that this visitor lived as a Melchizedek, in the likeness of a Melchizedek he worked as a Melchizedek, and he faithfully performed all of his assignments as an emergency Son of our order. By universal consent he has become chief of Melchizedek, having earned our love and adoration by his matchless wisdom, supreme love, and superb devotion to duty. He loved us, understood us, and forever we are his loyal and devoted follow Melchizedeks, for this stranger on our world has now eternally become a universe minister of the Melchizedek.* [119:1.6] *And that is all I am permitted to tell you of the first bestowal of Michael. We, of course, fully understand that this strange Melchizedek who so mysteriously served with the Melchizedeks a billion years ago was none other than the incarnate Michael on the mission of his first bestowal. The records do not specifically state that this unique and efficient Melchizedek was Michael, but it is universally believed that he was. Probably the actual statement of that fact cannot be found outside of the records of Sonarington, (Sonarington is headquarters of the accredited and approved ascending and descending Sons of God) and the records of that secret world are not open to us. Only on this sacred world of the divine Sons are the mysteries of incarnation and bestowal fully known. We all know of the facts of the Michaels bestowals, but we do not understand how they are affected. We do not know how the ruler of a universe, the creator of the Melchizedeks, can so suddenly and mysteriously become one of their numbers and, as one of them, live among them and work as a Melchizedek for one hundred years. But it happened.* ³

From all indications, these Higher Beings can take on different forms, as Michael the Son of God became Jesus Christ. When Michael showed up at the Melchizedeks' Headquarters as a Melchizedek, that was his first bestowal, as The Urantia Book calls it. After his last initiation on our planet as Christ, he was known in the Heaven World after that as Christ Michael. Reading these episodes of the initiation of Christ, I was fascinated, as it brought back memories of stories I read about the mythological initiation of Hercules, Zeus, etc. I am convinced stories like Hercules were just stories retold and had their origin from the Sumerian's cuneiforms long before the time of the Greeks and Romans Empires. The mythological initiations of the Greeks and Romans are vestiges of the initiation of Sons of God—traces of initiation stories left behind by

members of the Garden of Eden, and the days of Abraham and the Melchizedek. The initiations the Creative Sons of God had to experience were to help them better understand their creation from the lowest creatures to the highest.

It appears the Romans and Greeks didn't understand the true meaning of the stories of initiation of the Sons of God passed down to them from ancient Sumerians. They, no doubt, took these stories to be a fantasy of the ancient Sumerians and started to create their mythological fairy tales and the true meaning of these stories was lost to humanity. Even the later Sumerians didn't have a full understanding, an example was Gilgamesh. Now we can revive these stories to give them meaning and, in return, they will provide more meaning to our spiritual life, which we so desperately need.

Sacrificial Lamb

If we study and analyze Jesus' life as he lived it on earth, we will realize some things don't add up as they were reported to us through the years. First, Jesus was a knowledgeable person, especially for his age; he had the knowledge, demeanor, and wisdom of a much older man. And he knew he didn't have to die at that early age. We were taught he died for our sins. As I grew older, that statement became a great contradiction because I was also taught the Ten Commandments, and one of the Ten Commandments plainly states, "Thou Shall Not Kill." Why would God require someone to sacrifice their life to forgive us for our sins? Wouldn't that make all other sacrifices legitimate, even the sacrifice of the first-born sons the ancient Israelites once practiced?

We need to ask ourselves why an all-powerful Superior Being needs humans to kill his Son to forgive us for our sins, especially after God demanded we shouldn't kill. I tried to understand the real reason Jesus allowed himself to be put to death, and it stood out like a sore thumb. How often did he tell his disciples that his temple would be destroyed and in three days he would rise again (John 2:19)? That is why he was determined to be put to death, so he could demonstrate to us humans that if we follow in his footsteps, in three days after our death, we too will rise in another dimension. Otherwise, we would have to wait until the resurrection where our fate would be decided. The Churches do not emphasize this. They talk about a Sacrificial Lamb which Jesus never mentioned during his entire ministry; and if true, would have been one of the most critical statements in the Bible. Why didn't Jesus ever suggest that he was the Sacrificial Lamb? Was he too modest? I don't think so. Jesus taught us what we must do for our Heavenly Father to forgive us of our sins and that is to have faith and do his will, and our wrongdoings will be forgiven. It states in The Urantia Book the most excellent prayer one can offer to God is to do his will.

Jesus died to prove to us that we will be resurrected in new bodies. That's why Mary Magdalene did not recognize Jesus that Sunday morning at his burial site. He had a new body, and Jesus had to tell her who he was. Just as the caterpillars receive new bodies, so will we receive new, more spiritual bodies and we'll be in another dimension. After we receive our new bodies, we will proceed to those dimensions where Jesus rules. That is the reason he wasn't concerned about this world, and why his disciples couldn't understand. He often told them his kingdom was not of this world (John 18:36).⁴ The Urantia Book, it states, over 1,000 people saw Jesus in his resurrected body. Jesus said he would go and prepare a place for us. Is it so difficult for us to comprehend that he was talking about other worlds? He plainly stated he was not of this world: his kingdom was not of this world. It was apparent he was trying to teach his disciples there are other worlds, other dimensions. There are quite a few scientists who are working on mathematical theories of different dimensions, and many have proved

mathematically there are other dimensions. But many people don't believe the scientists when it comes to something like other dimensions; they only believe them when they are dealing with something they can see and touch—things that have made their lives much more pleasant, like computers, or other advanced technology. When it comes to something like other dimensions, they claim the scientists don't know what they are talking about— it's not in the Bible. The computer was not in the Bible, but it is here. According to The Urantia Book, those other worlds are inhabited by other beings. These are the worlds I believe Jesus spoke of when he said John 14:2, "In my Father's house, there are many mansions."

During the time Jesus was on earth, there were several patriotic Jewish groups. One of these groups, known as the Zealots, tried to persuade Jesus to lead them into a rebellion against the yoke of the Romans, but Jesus refused. Many of those political groups tried to solicit Jesus to join them, but their efforts were in vain. The idea of battle and slaughter was repulsive to Jesus; he would have none of it. He appeared on earth as the Prince of Peace, to reveal the God of love to his creation. According to The Urantia Book, just before his baptism by John the Baptist, the Zealots tried again to persuade Jesus to lead them into battle against the Romans oppressors. Jesus also had a difficult time trying to convince his disciples he was not here to sit on the throne of David and that his kingdom was not of this world.

John the Baptist

According to The Urantia Book, John the Baptist was born March 25, B.C. 7, just as Gabriel had promised Elizabeth in June of the year before. For five months, Elizabeth kept Gabriel's visit a secret. Zacharias was leery of the story when Elizabeth told him about it and didn't fully believe it until after he had a strange dream, just as Jesus' father had. Except for the visit of Gabriel, there was nothing unreal or supernatural connected to the birth of John the Baptist. Both John and Jesus had human fathers. I suppose if Elizabeth and Zacharias had not been married for such a long time, the Roman Catholic Church would have said that John was born of a virgin, that his birth was supernatural. When Gabriel announced the birth, he didn't say anything about one being born differently than the other. So where did the Romans get their fantastic story? If the story was from the Old Testament, why didn't Gabriel announce that? It would have been extremely important if it was true, but he just said two sons would be born.

The most eventful thing that happened in John's early life was when his parents took him to see Jesus and his family. This visit took place in the month of June, B.C. 1, John was a little over six years old. When he returned home his parents began to educate him; there was no synagogue school in this little village. Zacharias, being a priest, was fairly educated and Elizabeth was better educated than the average Judean women; since John was the only child, they spent a great amount of time on his spiritual and mental training. (Otherwise, he grew up as an ordinary child in a small city known in those days as the city of Judah about four miles from Jerusalem.)

John Becomes a Nazarite

John had no school from which to graduate at age 14, his parents decided that this was the appropriate time for him to take the formal Nazarite vow. So, Zacharias and Elizabeth took their son to Engedi down by the Dead Sea. Here, was the southern headquarters of the Nazarite Brotherhood, and here, John was inducted into this order for life. In this order, one had to abstain from all intoxicating drinks, let their hair grow long, and refrain from touching the dead. After John had made his vow, the family went to Jerusalem, where before the temple, John had to finalize the making of the offering which was required of those taking the Nazarite vow.

The vow John took was the same vow that his famous predecessors, Samson and the prophet Samuel, took. A Nazarite was considered a sanctified and holy person. The Jews looked upon the Nazarite with almost the same respect and honor that is given to a high priest; for them, it was not strange for the Nazarites of lifelong consecration to be the only persons, except the high priests who were permitted to enter the holy of holies in the temples.

When John was 16, years old, as a result of reading about Elijah, he became very impressed with the prophet of Mount Camel and decided to adopt his style of dress. From that day on, John always wore a hairy garment with a leather girdle. At 16, John was more than six feet tall and almost fully grown. With his flowing hair and strange mode of dress, he was certainly an odd-looking youth. His parents expected great things of their only son, a child of promise and a Nazarite for life.

At the beginning of the month of March, A.D. 25, John traveled around the western coast of the Dead Sea and up the river Jordan opposite Jericho, the ancient Ford over which Joshua and the children of Israel had passed when they first entered the Promised Land. He crossed over to the other side of the river; he prepared himself near the entrance of the ford and began to preach to the people on their way to and from across the river, as this is where most people crossed.

It was recognized by all who heard John that he was more than just a preacher. Most people who listened to this weird man, who came up from the Judean wilderness, went away believing they had heard the voice of a prophet. Tens of thousands of listeners came to hear him, some curious, but many in earnest as they came from all parts of Judea, Perea, and Samaria. The souls of these weary and expectant Jews were greatly stirred by this phenomenon. Not in all their history had the devout children of Abraham longed for the Consolation of Israel or more faintly looked for the restoration of the kingdom. Not in all Jewish history could John's message, the kingdom of Heaven is at hand, have more of a universal appeal at the very time he mysteriously appeared on the bank of the crossing of the Jordan. He was dressed like Elijah of old, and he thundered his admonition and poured forth his warning in the spirit and power of Elijah.

By December, A.D. 25, John's fame extended throughout all of Palestine and his work was the conversation of the entire town about the lake of Galilee. Jesus, speaking favorably of John's message, caused many from Capernaum to join John's cult of repentance and baptism. James and John, the sons of Zebedee, had gone in December to see John. After that, they went down once a week and brought back first-hand reports of the evangelist's work to Jesus.

Two of Jesus' brothers, James and Jude, had talked about going down to John to be baptized. Jude had come over to Capernaum for the Sabbath service; he and James, after listening to Jesus' discourse in the synagogue, decided to talk to Jesus about their plans for baptism by John. This was on a Saturday, January 12, A.D. 26. Jesus asked them if they would postpone the discussion until the following day and he would give them his answer.

Jesus slept very little that night; he was in close intercourse with the Father in heaven. He arranged to have lunch with his brothers at noon that next day, and then he would advise them concerning their desire to be baptized by John. That Sunday, Jesus was working as usual in the boat shop. James and Jude had arrived with his lunch and were waiting in the lumber room for him. It was not yet time for the midday break, and they knew that their brother Jesus was very prompt about such matters.

A little before the noon rest, Jesus laid down his tools, removed his work apron, and said to the three workmen that were in the room with him, "My hour has come." He went out to the lumber room where his brothers were waiting, repeating, "My hour has come let us go to John," The Urantia Book. And they started right away to Pella where John was preaching and baptizing, eating their lunch on the way. This was Sunday, January 13. They stayed the night in the Jordan Valley and arrived where John was baptizing around noon of the next day.

The Baptism of Jesus

John had just started baptizing the aspirants for the day. Many repentant were standing in line waiting their turn to be baptized when Jesus and his brothers got in line with these earnest men and women who had become believers in John's teachings concerning the coming kingdom.

John had asked about Jesus' several times when he talked to Zebedee's sons. He heard of Jesus' remarks about his preaching and day by day, he was hoping to see him arrive on the scene, but he did not expect to greet him in line with the baptismal candidates. In fact, John was engrossed with the details of baptizing many converts that he didn't see Jesus, the "Son of Man," until he was in his immediate presence. After recognizing Jesus, the ceremony was halted for a moment as John greeted his cousin, and asked, but why did you come down into the water to greet me? And Jesus answered, to be subject to your baptism. John answered: But I have need to be baptized by you. Why do you come to me?" (The Urantia Book)

And Jesus whispered to John: "Bear with me now, for it becomes us to set example for my brothers standing here with me and that the people would know that my hour has come, [135:8.5].

Jesus spoke to John with a voice of authority. John was trembling with emotion as he prepared Jesus of Nazareth in the Jordan River at noon on Monday, January 14, A.D. 26. And so, John baptized Jesus and his two brothers, James, and Jude. And when John baptized these three, he dismissed the crowd for the day, telling them he would resume baptism the next day at noon. As the people went on their way, the four men still standing in the water, heard a strange sound and there appeared for a moment an apparition over the head of Jesus and they heard a voice saying, "This is my beloved Son in whom I am well pleased." A tremendous change came over the face of Jesus; he got out of the water in silence and took his leave of them, going toward the hills to the east. And no man saw Jesus again for forty days.

When Jesus walked away, John followed him for a distance to tell him of the story of Gabriel's visit to his mother before either of them was born. John said he had heard the story so many times from his mother's lips. He let Jesus continue on his way after he said, "Now I know of a certainty that you are the Deliverer." But Jesus said nothing.

During the time of those 40 days of waiting, many rumors spread throughout the countryside to Tiberias and Jerusalem. Thousands went over to see the new attraction in John's camp. They talked about the Messiah, but Jesus was nowhere to be seen. When the disciples of John claim that the strange man of God took to the hills, many doubted the whole story.

Around three weeks after Jesus went to the hills, there appeared on the scene at Pella deputies from the priests and Pharisees at Jerusalem. They asked John on the spot if he was Elijah or the Prophet that Moses had promised, and John said, "I am not." Then they ask, Are you the Messiah?

John answered, "I am not. Then asked them from Jerusalem "If you are not the prophet, nor the Messiah, then who gave you the right to baptize people and create such a stir?" John said, "It is up to those people that have heard me and received my baptism to announce who I am." Then he said, Although I baptize with water, there has been among us one who will return and baptize you with the Holy Spirit, [135:9.4]. The following quote are from (The Urantia Book).

These were arduous days in John's experience; he had prayed for Jesus's return. Some of John's disciples organized groups to go in search of Jesus, but John forbade them, saying: "Our times are in the hands of the God of heaven; he will direct his chosen Son." (The Urantia Book)

The Forty Days

Jesus had overcome the Great Temptation of his mortal initiation before his baptism when he was on Mount Hermon for six weeks. He had gone into 40 days of rest to formulate the plans for proclaiming the new Kingdom of God in the hearts of man. Jesus did not go into the hills for the purpose of fasting and the affliction of his soul. He was not an ascetic, and he came to eradicate all such belief, regarding the search for God.

Jesus was then fully self-conscious concerning his relation to the universe of his making and his many helpers; he was also aware of the universe of universes controlled by God the Father in heaven. He now recalls the instruction given to him by his older brother Immanuel before he entered upon his earth incarnation. He clearly understood all relationships, and he wanted to be away for a while and meditate to think out his plans for public service.

While Jesus was wandering about the hills looking for suitable shelter, he encountered his universe chief of staff, Gabriel, the Bright and Morning Star of Nebadon (our local universe). Gabriel re-established personal communication with the Creator Son of our universe now Jesus of Nazareth; they met directly for the first time since Michael (Jesus) left Gabriel in the higher worlds in preparation for his final initiation on earth. Gabriel informed Jesus that his experience on earth was practically over, as far as concerned, his earning the title of sovereignty ruler of our universe and the termination of Lucifer rebellion. "And Jesus came and spake unto them saying All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth" Matthew 28:18.

Another Higher Being joined Jesus and Gabriel in their conference. He told Jesus he was now at liberty to terminate his incarnation, to ascend to the right hand of the Father to receive sovereignty rights and take over his well-earned unconditional rulership of all Nebadon. Meanwhile, through all the 40, days, Jesus was away, James and John Zebedee were searching for him. Several times they were not far from the place he had chosen as his shelter, but they never found him.

Jesus wasn't ready to return to the higher worlds, even though he was granted permission to do so. He couldn't leave his sons and daughters on earth without demonstrating to them the reason for being. He came that we may live life more fully. Part of his demonstration was to die and after three days, rise again. How often did he tell the Pharisees, if you destroy this temple (his body) in three, I'll raise it up again? (John 2:19) By dying and raising his body in three days, he was demonstrating to us that life is a continuum. After our transition, we will continue to evolve.

Jesus also said in my Father's house are many mansions, and I go to prepare a place for you (John 14:2). He said his kingdom is not of this world (John 18:36). Wasn't he telling us there are other worlds? Jesus was free to return to the worlds from whence he came and have complete dominion over his universe. But he loved mankind so much he was willing to die to show us that life is a continuum; he was willing to go through all the suffering to prove it to us. Today in physics the physicists are on the verge of proving there are other dimensions that are teeming with life. On the Sabbath February 23, A.D. 26, at morning breakfast, the group that was with John looked up toward the north and saw Jesus coming towards them. As he approached, John stood upon a large rock and lifting his voice, said: "Behold the Son of God, the deliverer of the world. This is the one of whom I spoke of; after me, there will come one who is preferred because he was before me; for this reason, I came out of the wilderness to preach repentance and to be baptized with water announcing the kingdom of heaven is at hand. Now the one is here who will baptize you with the Holy Spirit. And I saw the Divine Spirit descending upon this man, and I heard the voice of God declare, "This is my beloved Son in whom I am well pleased." (The Bible).

Jesus asked them to return to their meal, while he sat down to eat with John for his brothers had returned to Capernaum. All that Sabbath day, February 23, Jesus mingled with the people that surrounded John's camp. He ministered to a small boy who injured himself in a fall, and he took the child home to a nearby village in Pella to make sure the boy arrived safely home to his parents. During that Sabbath, two of John's most important disciples Andrew and his brother Simon spent a lot of time with Jesus; Andrew went with Jesus to make sure the boy got home safe as well.

Andrew was profoundly impressed with Jesus' teachings; on the way back to John's camp he asked Jesus many questions. Andrew said to Jesus, I have watched you every since you came to Capernaum and I believe you are the new teacher; although I do not understand all your teachings, I have made up my mind to follow you. I will sit at your feet and learn the whole truth about your new kingdom of God. (The Urantia Book) Andrew was the first of Jesus' twelve apostles who was to work with Jesus in the establishment of the new Kingdom of God in the hearts of men.

Jesus had returned to Pella for the night; Andrew and Simon were discussing the nature of their involvement in the establishment of the coming kingdom when James and John the sons of Zebedee arrived. They were just returning from the hills in search of Jesus; when they approached John the Baptist's camp, they overheard Simon Peter and his brother Andrew talking about their acceptance as Jesus' apostles and that they were leaving for Galilee the next morning. James and John were sad; they had known Jesus for some time and had lived with him. They searched for him in the hills for many days, only to return to learn others had been selected before them as his apostles. They asked where Jesus and they made haste to find him.

Jesus was asleep when they located him; they awakened him asking, "How is it that we who have so long lived with you and while we search the hills for you, you choose Andrew and Simon before us as your apostles in the new kingdom?" Jesus told them to be calm" and ask yourself. Who asked you to search for me while I was about my Father's business?" Jesus told them they should search for the secret of the kingdom in their hearts and not in the hills. John was bold enough to ask, "Master, will James and I be associates of yours in the new kingdom as Andrew and Simon?" Jesus' answer was so touching, I will quote it:

And Jesus, laying a hand on the shoulder of each of them, said: *My brethren, you were already with me in the spirit of the kingdom, even before these others made request to be received. You, my brethren, have no need to make request for entrance into the kingdom; you have been with me in the kingdom from the beginning. Before men, others may take precedence over you, but in my heart, did I also number you in the councils of the kingdom, even before you thought to make this request of me. And even so might you have been first before men had you not been absent engaged in a well-intentioned, but self-appointed task of seeking for one who was not lost. In the coming kingdom, be not mindful of those things which foster your anxiety, but rather at all times concern yourselves only with doing the will of the Father who is in heaven,* paper [137:1.6]. Early that next morning, Jesus left John and his disciples going back to Galilee; he never said when he would see them again. John asked about his own preaching and mission. Jesus only said, My Father, will guide you now and in the future as he has in the past. (The Urantia Book) And those great men separated that morning, on the banks of the Jordan River, never to see each other again in the flesh. After Jesus had left John's camp on his way to Galilee, he asked the four whom he had already chosen as apostles to help select the other eight, and they did until there were twelve of them. Not long after that, John the Baptist was imprisoned and killed by Herod Antipas.

The Hearts of the People

Jesus knew what was on the minds of the people of his time. He knew what was in their hearts, and if his teachings had been left as he presented them, all nations and races of the world would readily accept the gospel of the kingdom. Paul, in his efforts to bring the teachings of Jesus to the attention of specific groups, wrote many letters of instruction and warnings. Other teachers of the gospel did likewise, but none of them realized that some of those letters would be claimed as teachings of Jesus. While Christianity does contain more of Jesus teachings than any other religion, it also includes a great deal the Master did not teach. The early Christians incorporated into the teachings of the early Christian Church much of the Persian mysteries, and the Greek philosophy. The Urantia Book claims two great mistakes made as far as Jesus's teachings were concerned, and I quote:

[149:2.3] *The effort to connect the gospel teaching directly onto the Jewish theology, as illustrated by the Christian doctrines of the atonement—the teaching that Jesus was the sacrificed Son who would satisfy the Father's stern justice and appease the divine wrath. These teachings originated in a praise-worthy effort to make the gospel of the kingdom more acceptable to the disbelieving Jews. Though these efforts failed as far as winning the Jews were concerned, they did not fail to confuse and alienate many honest souls in all subsequent generations.*

[149:2.4] *The second great blunder of the Master's early followers, and one which all subsequent generations have persisted in perpetuating was to organize the Christian teaching so completely about the person of Jesus. This overemphasis of the personality of Jesus in the theology of Christianity has worked to obscure his teachings, and all of this has made it increasingly difficult for Jews, Mohammedans, Hindus, and other eastern religionists to accept the teachings of Jesus. We would not belittle the place of the person of Jesus in a religion, which might bear his name, but we would not permit such consideration to eclipse his inspired life or to supplant his saving message: the fatherhood of God and the brotherhood of man.*⁵

Jesus said many things that were not included in the Bible. For example, although the Bible did not bring it out, The Urantia Book mentioned that Jesus took a tour of Rome, which consumed most of his 28th year and all his 29th year. Jesus lived out his life without anyone except John

Zebedee of Bethsaida, (one of Jesus' close friends,) knowing he had made this extensive trip. Some of Jesus' friends thought he had returned to Damascus, and others thought he had gone to India; his own family was inclined to believe he was in Alexandria. When Jesus returned to Jerusalem, he did nothing to make his family think otherwise, as it was their opinion, he had left Jerusalem and traveled to Alexandria.

Before starting his trip, by what seemed to be by chance, Jesus met a wealthy traveler named Gonod and his son, a young man around 17 years old. They were from India and on their way to visit Rome and other places in the Mediterranean. They had arranged to visit Jerusalem during Passover, hoping to find someone they could hire as an interpreter for the father's business and as a tutor for the son. After meeting Jesus, the father insisted Jesus travel with them. Jesus told the father about his family situation that his father had died some years before in a construction accident, and he had a responsibility to care for his younger brothers, sisters, and his mother. Jesus was the oldest of his parent's eight children, only one of the boys were old enough to help care for the family and he was quite young. Jesus told the father it would be unfair to leave them for almost two years. The father agreed to pay Jesus one year's salary in advance, and Jesus accepted the father's offer.

During those years, Jesus became good friends with a man named John Zebedee whose father was a shipbuilder; and Jesus worked for him for a couple of years. He confided in John Zebedee not to let anyone know about his trip, and entrusted John to give His family a certain amount of money monthly Gonod had advanced him, until there was no money left; John said he would look after his family during His absence. Throughout the tour of Rome, Jesus was known as the "scribe from Damascus." On his return trip, he was known as the "Jewish tutor." The young man Jesus was hired to teach was named Ganid. While working four months at Damascus, Jesus picked up the basics of the language Ganid and Gonod spoke; and there Jesus labored on the translations from Greek into one of the languages of India; Jesus was assisted by a native of Gonad's home district.

While on the Mediterranean trip, Jesus spent about half of each day teaching Ganid and acting as an interpreter during Gonod's business conferences and social contacts. The remainder of the day was his own, which Jesus devoted to making intimate friends with his fellow humans.

An Analysis of Jonah

While in Joppa, Jesus met Gadia, a Philistine who worked as a tanner for a rich merchant named Simon. Gonad's agent in Mesopotamia transacted lots of business with Simon; Gonod and his son wanted to visit Simon when they reached Caesarea. While in Joppa, Jesus and Gadia became good friends. Gadia was a seeker and Jesus was a truth giver, the truth for that generation on earth.

One evening after Jesus and the young Philistine finished their evening meal, they strolled by the seashore. Gadia did not know this "Scribe of Damascus" was as versed in the Hebrew tradition when he pointed out to Jesus the ship landing from which it was believed that Jonah had started on his troubled voyage to Tarshish. When he had finished his remarks, he asked Jesus, "Do you think the big fish really swallowed Jonah?" Jesus, realizing this young man's life was greatly influenced by this tradition, and his concentration on it had impressed upon him the absurdity of trying to run away from his responsibility. Jesus made sure he wouldn't say anything that would suddenly destroy the young man's means of practical living. Answering his question, Jesus said: [130:1.2] *My friend, we are all Jonah with lives to live in accordance with the will of God, and at all times when we seek to escape the present duty of living by running away to far-off enticements, we thereby put ourselves in the immediate control of those influences which are not directed by the powers of truth and the forces of righteousness. The flight from duty is the sacrifice of truth. The*

escape from the service of light and life can only result in those distressing conflicts with the difficult whales of selfishness which lead eventually to darkness and death unless such God-forsaking Jonah shall turn their hearts, even when in the very depths of despair, to seek after God and his goodness. And when such disheartened souls sincerely seek for God—hunger for truth and thirst for righteousness there is nothing that can hold them in further captivity. No matter into what great depths they may have fallen, when they seek the light with a whole heart, the spirit of the Lord God of heaven will deliver them from their captivity; the evil circumstances of life will spew them out upon the dry land of fresh opportunities for renewed service and wiser living. ⁶

How often have some of us tried to escape our problems by relocating, only to find the problems go right along with us? We learn we are the problem. I recall many years ago as a young man around 26 years old; I tried to escape my problems by running away. At that time, I lived in Brooklyn, New York, and tried to escape by going to Virginia to live with my grandmother, only to find my problem was right there with me. I was my problem. I needed to make some changes. So, we see the story of Jonah was an allegory that some of us experience every day in our attempt to escape the problems of life.

Jesus mentioned when we try to escape our responsibility, we place ourselves in the wrong vibration, and anything can happen to us. The same is true about our religion because we have been misled in our religious beliefs. We are not receiving the full benefit of that Holy Spirit Jesus promised he would send for the simple reason we are not in the right vibration. Some people pray and pray but nothing ever happens, well, they are in the wrong vibration.

Now Gadiab was really moved by Jesus' teachings, and they talked way into the night by the seashore. But before they called it a night, they prayed together and for each other. This is the same Gadiab that later listened to Peter's preaching and became a profound believer in Jesus and was instrumental in Simon, the wealthy leather merchant, embracing Christianity.

On Jesus' last visit with Gadiab, they discussed good and evil. Gadiab was troubled by a feeling of injustice in the world because the evil in the world was alongside good. He said, "After all who created evil?" It was still believed in those days God created both good and evil. Gadiab asked: "How can God, if he is infinitely good, permit us to suffer the sorrows of evil?" In answering his question, Jesus explained to him that God is love, therefore, he must be good, and his goodness is so great it cannot contain the small and unreal things such as evil. God is good; there is no place in Him for negative evil. Evil is the immature action of those who are resistant to good who reject beauty and are disloyal to the truth. Evil is in the world because we humans choose to do evil; if we do not act in evil, it could not exist, so humans are the source of evil.

Throughout life, I have noticed some people tend to blame God for every tragic or negative experience they encounter; if someone in their family or they love gets cancer or some other terminal disease, they want to know why God allowed it to happen. They never consider what kind of life the person lived, nor do they consider the genetics transmission or the stress the person allowed themselves to be under for years. Nor did they ponder the effect of the food the person ate they knew wasn't good for them. And they ask God why? They are usually the same people that won't forgive another person for the wrong they have imposed upon them at some time or other. Their hatred overwhelms them, and their aura is saturated with the vibration of hate. Through the years, they draw more of this conglomeration of hate vibration to themselves, and it begins to take a toll on their physical bodies; their bodies begin to break down under the toxin of such evil vibrations. They are so selfish they are incapable

of seeing that it is impractical for God to intervene in our lives every time something bad happens to us, and if he did, there wouldn't be the world as we know it. It is taking humans a long time to understand the law of cause and effect; most of the time, someone, or even ourselves is the reason things happen in the physical world the way they do.

Jesus, Ganid, and his father stayed in Caesarea longer than expected because one of the huge steering paddles of the ship on which they intended to sail was discovered to be in danger of splitting. The captain of the ship decided to remain in port while a new one was being made. There was a shortage of skilled woodworkers for this job, so Jesus a master carpenter, volunteered to help. During the evening, Jesus and his friends walked along the beautiful walls that served as a promenade around the port. Ganid was really fascinated by Jesus' explanation of the water system of the city, and how the tides were utilized to flush the city's streets and sewers. On the second afternoon, Jesus, Ganid and his father attended a performance in the immense amphitheater, which could seat 20,000 people, and that evening, they went to see a Greek play at the theater. On the morning of the third day, they made a formal visit to the governor's palace. Caesarea was the capital of Palestine and the residence of the Roman procurator.

At the inn where they stayed, Jesus had several meetings with a Far-Eastern merchant who spoke Greek very well. The merchant was very impressed with Jesus' philosophy of life and he never forgot Jesus' words of wisdom concerning the living of the heavenly life while on earth using daily submission to the will of the heavenly Father. This merchant was a Taoist, and he became a devoted believer in one Universal God. When the man returned home to Mongolia, he began to teach these advanced doctrines to his sons, and because of such teachings, his oldest son became a Taoist priest. This young man wielded great influence on behalf of advanced truth throughout his life, and was followed by a son and a grandson who were also devotedly loyal to the doctrine of one God

One day, one of the young men who worked with Jesus on the steering paddle, became interested in the words Jesus spoke from time to time as they worked in the shipyard. When Jesus claimed the Father in heaven was interested in the welfare of his children on earth, this young Greek said: [130:2.4] *If God is interested in me, why doesn't He take away the cruel and unjust foreman of this workshop?" The young man was startled when Jesus answered: Since you know the way of kindness and value justice, perhaps the Gods have brought this erring man near that you may lead him into this better way. Maybe you are the salt which is to make this brother more agreeable to all other men; that is, if you have not lost your savor.* ⁷ The young man understood that Jesus meant it was perhaps destined for him to help the man to see his erring ways.

Many of the questions we humans have concerning life are in The Urantia Book. For example, one afternoon, Jesus and his student Ganid had both enjoyed playing with a very intelligent shepherd dog, and Ganid wanted to know if the dog had a soul and whether it had a will. Jesus responded the dog has a mind and can know his master, or material things, but cannot know God, which is a spirit. So, the dog does not possess a spiritual nature, and they are not capable of enjoying a spiritual experience. The dog may have a will derived from nature and increased by training, but the dog's power of the mind is not a spiritual force as in humanity. Humans have a unique mind, which can discern and search for God. A dog's mind is not reflective as the human mind. The dog is not capable of discriminating higher moral meaning or choosing spiritual and eternal values. It is the possession of such powers of spiritual discrimination and the ability to choose the truth, which makes mortals moral beings. Jesus went on to explain it is the lack of such mental powers in animals that make it forever impossible for the animal to develop language or to

experience anything equivalent to personality survival in eternity. After this day's conversation with Jesus, Ganid never again believed in the transmigration of the soul of man into the body of animals.

It is the Hindu's belief a human soul can transmigrate into an animal's body after death if that soul is degraded in vibration. I recall many years ago studying Hinduism, not because I wanted to become a Hindu, but because I wanted to understand what other cultures believed in, and why. I am glad I studied their religion, and I understand why they believe in what they do. We, in the Western World, have no right to judge them, as we should leave that up to those Higher Beings who understand such things. In this next quote, it tells us how the Higher Beings express animal life on our planet.

[36:2.17] *Sphere Number Four and its tributary satellites are devoted to the study of the evolution of creature life in general and to the evolutionary antecedents of any one-life level in particular. The original life plasma of an evolutionary world must contain the full potential for all future developmental variations and for all subsequent evolutionary changes and modifications. The provision for such far-reaching projects of life metamorphosis may require the appearance of many apparently useless forms of animal and vegetable life. Such by-products of planetary evolution, foreseen or unforeseen, appear upon the stage of action only to disappear, but in and through all this long process there runs the thread of the wise and intelligent formulations of the original designers of the planetary life plan and species scheme. The manifold by-products of biologic evolution are all essential to the final and full function of the higher intelligent forms of life, notwithstanding that great outward disharmony may prevail from time to time in the long upward struggle of the higher creatures to effect the mastery of the lower forms of life, many of which are sometimes so antagonistic to the peace and comfort of the evolving will creatures.*⁸ In other words, they are telling us that animals are indispensable to man's intellect as well as his physical evolution, and I would imagine this is how the cells are developed over hundreds of thousands of years through the bodies of those animals. They have a special sphere for this study.

The Discourse on True Religion

One day while Jesus his apostles and evangelists were on their way from northern Galilee to the Phoenician coast, they stopped for rest and Jesus began to lecture them.

[155:5and6] *This memorable discourse on religion, summarized and restated in modern phraseology, gave expression to the following truths: While the religions of the world have a double origin—natural and revelatory—at any one time and among any one people there are to be found three distinct forms of religious devotion. And these three manifestations of the religious urge are:*

- 1. Primitive religion. The seminatural and instinctive urge to fear mysterious energies and worship superior forces, chiefly a religion of the physical, nature, the religion of fear.*
- 2. The religion of civilization. The advancing religious concepts and practices of the civilizing races—the religion of the mind—the intellectual theology of the authority of established religious tradition.*
- 3. True religion—the religion of revelation. The revelation of supernatural values, a partial insight into eternal realities, a glimpse of the goodness and beauty of the infinite character of the Father in heaven—the religion of the spirit as demonstrated in human experience.*

The religion of the physical senses and the superstitious fears of natural man, the Master refused to belittle, though he deplored the fact that so much of this primitive form of worship should persist in the religious forms of the more intelligent races of mankind. Jesus made it clear that the great difference between the religion of the mind and the religion of the spirit is that, while ecclesiastical authority upholds the former, the latter is wholly based on human experience. And then the Master, in his hour of teaching, went on to make clear these truths:

Until the races become highly intelligent and more fully civilized, there will persist many of those childlike and superstitious ceremonies, which are so characteristic of the evolutionary religious practices of primitive and backward peoples. Until the human race progresses to the level of a higher and more general recognition of the realities of spiritual experience, large numbers of men and women will continue to show a personal preference for those religions of authority which require only intellectual assent, in contrast to the religion of the spirit, which entails active participation of mind and soul in the faith adventure of grappling with the rigorous realities of progressive human experience.

The acceptance of the traditional religions of authority presents the easy way out for man's urge to seek satisfaction for the longings of his spiritual nature. The settled, crystallized, and established religions of authority afford a ready refuge to which the distracted and distraught soul of man may flee when harassed by fear and tormented by uncertainty. Such a religion requires of its devotees, as the price to be paid for its satisfactions and assurances, only a passive and purely intellectual assent.

And for a long time there will live on earth those timid, fearful, and hesitant individuals who will prefer thus to secure their religious consolations, even though, in so casting their lot with the religions of authority, they compromise the sovereignty of personality, debase the dignity of self-respect, and utterly surrender the right to participate in that most thrilling and inspiring of all possible human experiences: the personal quest for truth, the exhilaration of facing the perils of intellectual discovery, the determination to explore the realities of personal religious experience, the supreme satisfaction of experiencing the personal triumph of the actual realization of the victory of spiritual faith over intellectual doubt as it is honestly won in the supreme adventure of all human existence—man seeking God, for himself and as himself, and finding him.

The religion of the spirit means effort, struggle, conflict, faith, determination, love, loyalty, and progress. The religion of the mind—the theology of authority—requires little or none of these exertions from its formal believers. Tradition is a safe refuge and an easy path for those fearful and halfhearted souls who instinctively shun the spirit struggles and mental uncertainties associated with those faith voyages of daring adventure out upon the high seas of unexplored truth in search for the farther shores of spiritual realities as they may be discovered by the progressive human mind and experienced by the evolving human soul.

And Jesus went on to say: "At Jerusalem the religious leaders have formulated the various doctrines of their traditional teachers and the prophets of other days into an established system of intellectual beliefs, a religion of authority

The appeal of all such religions is largely to the mind. And now are we about to enter upon a deadly conflict with such a religion since we will so shortly begin the bold proclamation of a new religion—a religion which is not a religion in the present-day meaning of that word, a religion that makes its chief appeal to the divine spirit of my Father which resides in the mind of man; a religion which shall derive its authority from the fruits of its acceptance that will so certainly appear in the personal experience of all who really and truly become believers in the truths of this higher spiritual communion."

Pointing out each of the twenty-four and calling them by name, Jesus said: "And now, which one of you would prefer to take this easy path of conformity to an established and fossilized religion, as defended by the Pharisees at Jerusalem, rather than to suffer the difficulties and persecutions attendant upon the mission of proclaiming a better way of salvation to men while you realize the satisfaction of discovering for yourselves the beauties of the realities of a living and personal experience in the eternal truths and supreme grandeurs of the kingdom of heaven? Are you fearful, soft, and ease seeking? Are you afraid to trust your future in the hands of the God of truth, whose sons you are? Are you distrustful of the Father, whose children you are? Will you go back to the easy path of the certainty and intellectual settledness of the religion of traditional authority, or will you gird yourselves to go forward with me into that uncertain and troublous future of proclaiming the new truths of the religion of the spirit, the kingdom of heaven in the hearts of men?"

All twenty-four of his hearers rose to their feet, intending to signify their united and loyal response to this, one of the few emotional appeals that Jesus ever made to them, but he raised his hand and stopped them, saying: "Go now apart by yourselves, each man alone with the Father, and there find the unemotional answer to my question, and having found such a true and sincere attitude of soul, speak that answer freely and boldly to my Father and your Father, whose infinite life of love is the very spirit of the religion we proclaim."

The evangelists and apostles went apart by themselves for a short time. Their spirits were uplifted, their minds were inspired, and their emotions mightily stirred by what Jesus had said. But when Andrew called them together, the Master said only: "Let us resume our journey. We go into Phoenicia to tarry for a season, and all of you should pray the Father to transform your emotions of mind and body into the higher loyalties of mind and the more satisfying experiences of the spirit."

As they journeyed on down the road, the 24 were silent, but presently they began to talk one with another, and by three o'clock that afternoon they could not go further; they came to a halt, and going up to Jesus, Peter, said: "Master, you have spoken to us the words of life and truth. We would hear more; we beseech you to talk to us further concerning these matters."

The Second Discourse on Religion

And so, while they paused in the shade of the hillside, Jesus continued to teach them regarding the religion of the spirit, in substance saying: You have come out from among those of your fellows who choose to remain satisfied with a religion of mind, who crave security and prefer conformity. You have elected to exchange your feelings of authoritative certainty for the assurances of the spirit of adventurous and progressive faith. You have dared to protest against the grueling bondage of institutional religion and to reject the authority of the traditions of record, which are now regarded as the word of God. Our Father did indeed speak through Moses, Elijah, Isaiah, Amos, and Hosea, but he did not cease to minister words of truth to the world when these prophets of old made an end of their utterances. My Father is no respecter of races or generations in that the word of truth is vouchsafed one age and withheld from another. Commit not the folly of calling that divine which is wholly human, and fail not to discern the words of truth which come not through the traditional oracles of supposed inspiration.

I have called upon you to be born again, to be born of the spirit. I have called you out of the darkness of authority and the lethargy of tradition into the transcendent light of the realization of the possibility of making for yourselves the greatest discovery possible for the human soul to make—the supernal experience of finding God for yourself, in yourself, and of yourself, and of doing all this as a fact in your own personal

experience. And so may you pass from death to life, from the authority of tradition to the experience of knowing God; thus will you pass from darkness to light, from a racial faith inherited to a personal faith achieved by actual experience; and thereby will you progress from a theology of mind handed down by your ancestors to a true religion of spirit which shall be built up in your souls as an eternal endowment.

Your religion shall change from the mere intellectual belief in traditional authority to the actual experience of that living faith which is able to grasp the reality of God and all that relates to the divine spirit of the Father. The religion of the mind ties you hopelessly to the past; the religion of the spirit consists in progressive revelation and ever beckons you on toward higher and holier achievements in spiritual ideals and eternal realities.

While the religion of authority may impart a present feeling of settled security, you pay for such a transient satisfaction the price of the loss of your spiritual freedom and religious liberty. My Father does not require of you as the price of entering the kingdom of heaven that you should force yourself to subscribe to a belief in things which are spiritually repugnant, unholy, and untruthful. It is not required of you that your own sense of mercy, justice, and truth should be outraged by submission to an outworn system of religious forms and ceremonies. The religion of the spirit leaves you forever free to follow the truth wherever the leadings of the spirit may take you. And who can judge—perhaps this spirit may have something to impart to this generation, which other generations have refused to hear?

Shame on those false religious teachers who would drag hungry souls back into the dim and distant past and there leaves them! And so are these unfortunate persons doomed to become frightened by every new discovery, while they are discomfited by every new revelation of truth. The prophet who said, "He will be kept in perfect peace whose mind is stayed on God," was not a mere intellectual believer in authoritative theology. This truth-knowing human had discovered God; he was not merely talking about God.

I admonish you to give up the practice of always quoting the prophets of old and praising the heroes of Israel, and instead aspire to become living prophets of the Most High and spiritual heroes of the coming kingdom. To honor the God-knowing leaders of the past may indeed be worthwhile, but why, in so doing, should you sacrifice the supreme experience of human existence: finding God for yourselves and knowing him in your own souls?

Every race of mankind has its own mental outlook upon human existence; therefore must the religion of the mind ever run true to these various racial viewpoints. Never can the religions of authority come to unification. Human unity and mortal brotherhood can be achieved only by and through the superendowment of the religion of the spirit. Racial minds may differ, but the same divine and eternal spirit indwells all mankind. The hope of human brotherhood can only be realized when, and as, the divergent mind religions of authority become impregnated with, and overshadowed by, the unifying and ennobling religion of the spirit—the religion of personal spiritual experience.

The religions of authority can only divide men and set them in conscientious array against each other; the religion of the spirit will progressively draw men together and cause them to become understandingly sympathetic with one another. The religions of authority require of men uniformity in belief, but this is impossible of realization in the present state of the world. The religion of the spirit requires only unity of experience—uniformity of destiny—making full allowance for diversity of belief. The religion of the spirit requires only uniformity of insight, not uniformity of viewpoint and outlook. The religion of the spirit does not demand uniformity of intellectual views, only unity of spirit feeling. The religions of authority

crystallize into lifeless creeds; the religion of the spirit grows into the increasing joy and liberty of ennobling deeds of loving service and merciful ministrations.

But watch, lest any of you look with disdain upon the children of Abraham because they have fallen on these evil days of traditional barrenness. Our forefathers gave themselves up to the persistent and passionate search for God, and they found him as no other whole race of men have ever known him since the times of Adam, who knew much of this as he was himself a Son of God. My Father has not failed to mark the long and untiring struggle of Israel, ever since the days of Moses, to find God and to know God. For weary generations the Jews have not ceased to toil, sweat, groan, travail, and endure the sufferings and experience the sorrows of a misunderstood and despised people, all in order that they might come a little nearer the discovery of the truth about God. And, notwithstanding all the failures and faltering of Israel, our fathers progressively, from Moses to the times of Amos and Hosea, did reveal increasingly to the whole world an ever clearer and more truthful picture of the eternal God. And so was the way prepared for the still greater revelation of the Father, which you have been called, to share. Never forget there is only one adventure which is more satisfying and thrilling than the attempt to discover the will of the living God, and that is the supreme experience of honestly trying to do that divine will. And fail not to remember that the will of God can be done in any earthly occupation. Some callings are not holy and others secular. All things are sacred in the lives of those who are spirit led; that is, subordinated to truth, ennobled by love, dominated by mercy, and restrained by fairness—justice. The spirit, which my Father and I shall send into the world, is not only the Spirit of Truth, but also the spirit of idealistic beauty.

You must cease to seek for the word of God only on the pages of the olden records of theologic authority. Those who are born of the spirit of God shall henceforth discern the word of God regardless of whence it appears to take origin. Divine truth must not be discounted because the channel of its bestowal is apparently human. Many of your brethren have minds, which accept the theory of God while they spiritually fail to realize the presence of God. And that is just the reason why I have so often taught you that the kingdom of heaven can best be realized by acquiring the spiritual attitude of a sincere child. It is not the mental immaturity of the child that I commend to you but rather the spiritual simplicity of such an easy-believing and fully trusting little one. It is not so important that you should know about the fact of God as that you should increasingly grow in the ability to feel the presence of God.

When you once begin to find God in your soul, presently you will begin to discover him in other men's souls and eventually in all the creatures and creations of a mighty universe. But what chance does the Father have to appear as a God of supreme loyalties and divine ideals in the souls of men who give little or no time to the thoughtful contemplation of such eternal realities? While the mind is not the seat of the spiritual nature, it is indeed the gateway thereto.

But do not make the mistake of trying to prove to other men that you have found God; you cannot consciously produce such valid proof, albeit there are two positive and powerful demonstrations of the fact that you are God-knowing, and they are:

- 1. The fruits of the spirit of God showing forth in your daily routine life.*
- 2. The fact that your entire life plan furnishes positive proof that you have unreservedly risked everything you are and have on the adventure of survival after death in the pursuit of the hope of finding the God of eternity, whose presence you have foretasted in time.*

Now, mistake not, my Father will ever respond to the faintest flicker of faith. He takes note of the physical and superstitious emotions of the primitive man. And with those honest but fearful souls whose faith is so weak that it amounts to little more than an intellectual conformity to a passive attitude of assent to religions of authority, the Father is ever alert to honor and foster even all such feeble attempts to reach out for him. But you who have been called out of darkness into the light are expected to believe with a whole heart; your faith shall dominate the combined attitudes of body, mind, and spirit.

You are my apostles, and to you religion shall not become a theologic shelter to which you may flee in fear of facing the rugged realities of spiritual progress and idealistic adventure; but rather shall your religion become the fact of real experience which testifies that God has found you, idealized, ennobled, and spiritualized you, and that you have enlisted in the eternal adventure of finding the God who has thus found and sonshipped you. And when Jesus had finished speaking, he beckoned to Andrew and, pointing to the west toward Phoenicia, said: "Let us be on our way."⁹

Chapter 11

The Wedding at Cana

Now we will fast forward to a wedding Jesus was invited to and the so-called miracle of the wine. During this period of history in the Middle East, especially among the Jews, people always expected prophets or messiahs to perform great wonders to prove that they were of God. But Jesus didn't believe this proved anything; he didn't like to disrupt the laws of nature. He did wonderful things, but usually, they were within the laws of nature in some ways we don't understand. Jesus' mother and family always expected him to perform miracles, but he had always refused.

This was an important wedding Jesus his mother and most of his brothers and sisters were there. A great multitude of people was there as well, many of whom were not invited, and they soon ran out of wine. Those people who were not invited were there because Jesus led the wedding procession, and he was becoming very well-known in that area and had performed quite a few healings. By this time, Jesus was completely aware of his human existence, his divine pre-existence, and the state of his combined, human and divine natures.

As the wedding day progressed, Jesus became more conscious that the people expected him to perform some kind of miracle, especially his family who were looking for him to announce his coming kingdom by some startling and supernatural manifestation. Jesus' family and the apostles expected Jesus to sit on the throne of David, gather an army and crush their Roman oppressors. But Jesus came to earth (the higher ones call Urantia) as the prince of peace.

Early in the afternoon at the wedding, Mary, Jesus' mother, found her son James; and together, they approached Jesus to ask him at what hour he had planned to make himself known as the "Supernatural One." Jesus said, "If you love me, then be willing to wait, while I wait upon the will of my Father in heaven." The Urantia Book. This act of his mother was a disappointment to the human Jesus. When Jesus was in the hills deciding how he would go about presenting God's kingdom to humanity, he decided against an outward demonstration of his divinity. For several hours, Mary was depressed. She said to James, "I don't understand him. Is there no end to his strange ways?" The Urantia Book.

The wedding proceeded with a silence of expectation. Then, the word went around that the carpenter and boat builder, announced by John the Baptist as "The Deliverer," will show his hand during the evening festivities, perhaps at the wedding supper. But all expectancy of the supernatural demonstration was removed from the apostles when Jesus called them together. He said to them, [137:4.9] Think not that I have come to this place to work some wonder for the gratification of the curious or for the conviction of those who doubt. Rather are we here to wait upon the will of our Father who art in heaven. When Mary and others saw him gathering with his apostles, they concluded something remarkable was about to happen. They all sat down to enjoy the wedding supper and evening festivities with high expectation.

The father of the bridegroom purchased enough wine for all who were invited to the wedding; however he didn't know that the marriage of his son would be an event so closely related to the expected announcement of Jesus as the "Messianic Deliverer," and people invited themselves. He was delighted to have Jesus as his honored guest, but before the wedding supper was over; one of the servants brought him the bad news that the wine was running low.

When supper ended, and the guests were strolling about the garden, the bridegroom mother informed Mary, Jesus' mother that the supply of wine had run out. Mary told her not to worry that she would speak to her son, and she said, He will help us. This section is so touching; I felt I would be justified in quoting it:

[137:4.8] Throughout a period of many years, Mary had always turned to Jesus for help in every crisis of their home life at Nazareth, so that it was only natural for her to think of him at this time. But this ambitious mother had still other motives for appealing to her eldest son on this occasion. As Jesus was standing alone in the corner of the garden, his mother approached him, saying, "My son, they have no wine." And Jesus answered, "My good woman, what have I to do with that?" Said Mary, "But I believe your hour has come; cannot you help us?" Jesus replied: "Again I declare that I have not come to do things in this wise. Why do you trouble me again with these matters?" And then, breaking down in tears, Mary entreated him, "But, my son, I promised them that you would help us; won't you please do something for me?" And then spoke Jesus: "Woman, what have you to do with making such promises? See that you do it not again. We must in all things wait upon the will of the Father in heaven."

[137:4.9] Mary, the mother of Jesus, was crushed; she was stunned! As she stood there before him motionless, with the tears streaming down her face, the human heart of Jesus was overcome with compassion for the woman who had borne him in the flesh; and bending forward, he laid his hand tenderly upon her head, saying: "Now, now, Mother Mary, grieve not over my apparently hard sayings, nor have I not many times told you that I have come only to do the will of my heavenly Father? Most gladly would I do what you ask of me if it were a part of the Father's will"—and Jesus stopped short, he hesitated. Mary seemed to sense that something was happening. Leaping up, she threw her arms around Jesus' neck, kissed him, and rushed off to the servants' quarters, saying, "Whatever my son says, that do." But Jesus said nothing. He now realized that he had already said — or rather desirably thought — too much.

[137:4.10] Mary was dancing with glee. She did not know how the wine would be produced, but she confidently believed that she had finally persuaded her first-born son to assert his authority, to dare to step forth and claim his position and exhibit his Messianic power. And, because of the presence and association of certain universe powers and personalities, of which all those present were wholly ignorant, she was not to be disappointed. The wine Mary desired and which Jesus, the God-man, humanly and sympathetically wished for, was forthcoming.

[137:4.11] Near at hand stood six waterpots of stone, filled with water, holding about twenty gallons apiece. This water was intended for subsequent use in the final purification ceremonies of the wedding celebration. The commotion of the servants about these huge stone vessels, under the busy direction of his mother, attracted Jesus' attention, and going over, he observed that they were drawing wine out of them by the pitcherful.

[137:4.12] It was gradually dawning upon Jesus what had happened. Of all persons present at the marriage feast of Cana, Jesus was the most surprised. Others had expected him to work a wonder, but that was just what he had purposed not to do. And then the Son of Man recalled the admonition of his Personalized Thought Adjuster in the hills. He recounted how the Adjuster had warned him about the inability of any power or personality to deprive him of the creator prerogative of independence of time. On this occasion power transformers, midwayers, and all other required personalities were assembled near the water and other necessary elements, and in the face of the expressed wish of the Universe Creator Sovereign, there was no escaping the instantaneous appearance of wine. And this occurrence was made doubly certain since the Personalized Adjuster had signified that the execution of the Son's desire was in no way a contravention of the Father's will. '

There was no hocus-pocus performed here. The compassion Jesus felt for his mother and his desire to help her was enough for those powerful beings in the higher dimension to bring his desire into manifestation almost instantaneously. Usually, when we wish something to manifest, it takes time, and we must be persistent. Jesus being a Creator Son, the Higher Beings, brought Jesus' desire into manifestation instantly.

God's Wrath

During April, A.D. 26 Jesus and the Apostles worked in Jerusalem ministering to the people; this was the month of the Passover Festivities. A man was attending the Passover Festivities by the name of Jacob he was a wealthy Jewish trader from Crete, and he came to Andrew one of Jesus' apostles, requesting to see Jesus privately. Andrew arranged this meeting with Jesus at the home of one called Flavius' on the evening of the next day. This man could not understand Jesus' teaching and desired to understand it better; he wanted to know more about the kingdom of God.

The next day at Flavius' home, Jacob said to Jesus: [142:2.1] "But Rabbi Moses and the olden prophets tell us that Yahweh is a jealous God, a God of great wrath and fierce anger. The prophets said he hates evildoers and takes vengeance on those that do obey not his law. You and your disciples tell us that God is a kind and compassionate Father who loves all men that he would welcome into his new kingdom of heaven which you proclaim is so near at hand.

When Jacob finished speaking, Jesus said: [142 :2.2] *Jacob, you well stated the teaching of the olden prophets who taught the children of their generation in accordance with the light of their day. Our Father in Paradise is changeless. But the concept of his nature has enlarged and grown from the days of Moses down through the days of Amos and even to the generation of the prophet Isaiah. And now have I come in the flesh to reveal the Father in the new glory, and to show forth his love and mercy to all men on all worlds. As the gospel of this kingdom shall spread over the world with its message of good cheer and goodwill to all men, there will grow up improved and better relations among families of all nations. As time passes, father and children will love each other more, and thus will be brought about a better understanding of the love of the Father in heaven for his children on earth. Remember Jacob that a good and true father not only loves his family as a whole—as a family—but he also truly loves and affectionately cares for each individual member.*

After talking for a while about the Father's character, Jesus paused and said to Jacob, [142:2.3] You being the father of many knows what I am saying are true." Jacob said to Jesus, "But who told you that I am the father of six children? How did you know this about me?" And Jesus said,

Suffice it to say that the Father and the Son knows all things, for indeed they see all. Loving your children as a father on earth, you must now accept as a reality the love of the heavenly Father for you—not just all the children of Abraham, but for you, your individual soul.

Then Jesus went on to say: 142:2.4] “When your children are very young and immature, and you must chastise them, they may reflect that their father is angry and filled with resentful wrath. Their immaturity cannot penetrate beyond the punishment to discern the father’s farseeing and corrective affection. But when these same children become grown-up-men and women, would it not be folly for them to cling to these earlier and misconceived notions regarding their father? As men and women, they should now discern their father’s love in all these disciplines. And should not mankind, as the centuries pass, come the better to understand the true nature and loving character of the Father in heaven. What profit have you from successive generations of spiritual illumination if you persist in viewing God as Moses and the prophets saw him? I say to you, Jacob, under the bright light of this hour you should see the Father as none of those who have gone before ever beheld him. And thus seeing him, you should rejoice to enter the kingdom wherein such a merciful Father rules, and you should seek to have his will of love dominate your life henceforth. And Jacob answered: [142:2.5] Rabbi I believe, I desire that you lead me into the Father Kingdom. ²

The Purpose of Affliction

One of the private interviews Jesus held in Zebedee’s Garden was with Nathaniel, one of his twelve apostles. Nathaniel asked Jesus: [148:5.1] *Master, though I am beginning to understand why you refuse to practice healing indiscriminately, I am still at a loss to understand why the loving Father in heaven permits so many of his children on earth to suffer so many afflictions. The Master answered Nathaniel, saying:*

[148:5.2] Nathaniel, you and many others are thus perplexed because you do not comprehend how the natural order of this world has been so many times upset by the sinful adventures of certain rebellious traitors to the Father’s will. And I have come to make a beginning of setting these things in order. But many ages will be required to restore this part of the universe to former paths and thus release the children of men from the extra burdens of sin and rebellion. The presence of evil alone is a sufficient test for the ascension of man — sin is not essential to survival.

[148:5.3] But, my son, you should know that the Father does not purposely afflict his children. Man brings down upon himself unnecessary affliction as a result of his persistent refusal to walk in the better ways of the divine will. Affliction is potential in evil, but much of it has been produced by sin and iniquity. Many unusual events have transpired on this world, and it is not strange that all thinking men should be perplexed by the scenes of suffering and affliction which they witness. But of one thing you may be sure: The Father does not send affliction as an arbitrary punishment for wrongdoing. The imperfections and handicaps of evil are inherent; the penalties of sin are inevitable; the destroying consequences of iniquity are inexorable. Man should not blame God for those afflictions which are the natural result of the life which he chooses to live; neither should man complain of those experiences which are a part of life as it is lived on this world. It is the Father’s will that mortal man should work persistently and consistently toward the betterment of his estate on earth. Intelligent application would enable man to overcome much of his earthly misery.

148:5.4] “Nathaniel, it is our mission to help men solve their spiritual problems and in this way to quicken their minds so that they may be the better prepared and inspired to go about solving their manifold material problems. I know of your confusion as you have read the Scriptures. All too often there has prevailed a tendency to ascribe to God the responsibility for everything which ignorant man fails to understand. The Father

is not personally responsible for all you may fail to comprehend. Do not doubt the love of the Father just because some just and wise law of his ordaining chances to afflict you because you have innocently or deliberately transgressed such a divine ordinance. ³

I mentioned before that the rebellion of the prince of this world and Lucifer, which Jesus spoke of also the default of Adam and Eve, caused great suffering on our planet. Jesus mentions in this quote that the imperfection and handicaps of evil are inherent, but now we know that we can change our disposition. “And recently scientists have discovered that we can alter our genes in a much shorter period than previously believed; the workings of the genes are not carved in stone. A well-known doctor Bruce Lipton in his book, *The Biology of Life*, shows that our beliefs, true or false, positive or negative, affect genetic activity and alter our genetic code. And all this coincides with God’s plan of free will. We can no longer blame our genes for what happened to us. We can blame ourselves.

Jesus also states that it is the Father’s will that mortal man should work persistently and consistently toward the betterment of his estate on earth. He says that intelligent application would enable man to overcome much of his misery. We can, if we are persistent, overcome. Many people do overcome; you can read my autobiography, *Hard Times Don’t Last Always*, and learn what I had to overcome as an abused child.

Resurrection of Lazarus

Very late Sunday night, February 26, 30 A.D., a runner from a small village called Bethany, arrived at Philadelphia where Jesus and his apostles were ministering to the people with a message from Lazarus’ sisters, Martha, and Mary, saying: Lord, him whom you love is very sick. Jesus sent a message back saying: This sickness is not to the death. Doubt not that it may be used to glorify the Father and exalts the Son. The *Urantia Book*. Jesus was very fond of Mary, Martha, and their brother, Lazarus. Jesus arrived in Bethany four days after Lazarus died. Of all of Jesus’ healing and restoring sight to the blind, his most celebrated work was raising Lazarus from the dead.

As I said before, there was no hocus-pocus going on. When Jesus reached the place where Lazarus was buried, a small group of Lazarus’ friends gathered around. The people present at the burial site didn’t realize the presence of a vast array of celestial beings on hand, in another dimension under the leadership of Gabriel and just waiting to execute the bidding of their beloved sovereign, Jesus of Nazareth. Jesus asked that the stone be moved from the entrance to the tomb where Lazarus lay. Martha didn’t understand why Jesus wanted the stone moved; she thought perhaps Jesus wanted to see Lazarus one last time. They hesitated to roll away the stone. Jesus said: Did I not tell you this sickness is not to the death; if you just believed you would see the glory of God? The *Urantia Book*. When Jesus finished speaking to his apostles, with the help of neighbors, the stone was moved from the entrance to the tomb. As a group of about 45 people stood at the tomb, they could barely see the form of Lazarus wrapped in linen bandages. While these earth people stood there in silence, a vast host of celestial beings had sprung into their place waiting to answer the signal to action given by Gabriel, their commander.

Jesus lifted his eyes and said: [168:2.2] Father I am thankful that you heard and answered my request. I know that you always hear me, but because of those who stand here with me, I thus speak with you, that they may believe that you have sent me into the world and that they may know that you are working with me in that which we are about to do. And when he had prayed, he cried out with a loud voice, Lazarus come forth.

Although the humans didn't make a move, the vast celestial was all stirred in the unified action of obedience to the creators' word. In just 12 seconds (according to The Urantia Book) of our time, the lifeless body of Lazarus began to move and sat up on the edge of the stone shelf where it had rested. His body bonded with grave clothes, and his face covered with napkins. He stood up before them alive Jesus said, "Lose him and let him go; The Urantia Book.

All but the apostles, Mary, and Martha, fled to the house. They were pale with fright and overcome with amazement, and while some stayed, many hurried to their homes. Lazarus, standing there, greeted Jesus and the apostles and asked the meaning of the grave clothes, and why he had awakened in the garden. Jesus and the apostles moved to one side, while Martha told Lazarus of his death, burial, and resurrection. She explained all that had happened to him.

Some may think this is a strange story, but if we were in existence for billions of years as some of those Higher Beings, what is there we wouldn't be able to do? Some of those beings that were present at the time of Lazarus' resurrection, no doubt, helped to build the universe, that our scientists claim to be around 13.7 billion years old. Someone had to create it; there was no hocus-pocus (smile).

What Became of Lazarus

Lazarus remained at the Bethany home, being the center of great interest to many sincere believers and numerous curious individuals, until the days of the crucifixion of Jesus when he received a warning that the Sanhedrin had decreed his death. The rulers of the Jews were determined to put a stop to the further spread of the teachings of Jesus, and they judged that it would be useless to put Jesus to death if they permitted Lazarus Who represented the very peak of his wonderworking, to live and bear testimony to the fact that Jesus had raised him from the dead. Lazarus already had suffered bitter persecution from them. And so, Lazarus took a hasty leave of his sisters at Bethany and fled down through Jericho and across the Jordan, never permitting himself to rest long until he had reached Philadelphia. Lazarus knew Abner well, and here he felt safe from the murderous intrigues of the wicked Sanhedrin.

Soon after this Martha and Mary disposed of their lands at Bethany and joined their brother in Perea, meantime, Lazarus had become the treasurer of the church at Philadelphia. He became a strong supporter of Abner in his controversy with Paul and the Jerusalem church and ultimately died at 67 years old, of the same sickness that he died from as a young man and Jesus brought back to life at Bethany.

When we make our transition, the same thing will happen to us what happened to Lazarus; he didn't realize he had died until his sister told him and he resumed his life where he left off. The only difference is that we will be in another dimension with new bodies made of different materials, we will continue our living.

Chapter 12

The Last Days of Jesus

When the work of teaching the people did not command their attention, the custom of Jesus and the apostles was to rest from all activities on Wednesdays. On this specific Wednesday, they ate breakfast later than usual, and their camp was filled with an all-consuming silence; they said little during the first half of breakfast. Jesus broke the silence by telling his apostles that he desired all of them to rest all day, to take the time to reflect on all that had happened since they had come to Jerusalem; and, to think about what lay ahead.

After breakfast, the Master informed the apostle Andrew who was the administrator of their group that he planned to be absent for the day and suggested that the apostles be permitted to spend time according to their desires; but under no circumstance were they to go into Jerusalem.

When Jesus prepared to go into the hills alone, David Zebedee, one of Jesus' close friends, approached him. He told him that he well knew that the Pharisees and Rulers were out to destroy him, And you are preparing to go into the hills alone; I will send three men with you to make sure you are safe. Jesus told David that he meant well: But you are wrong; you don't understand that no harm will come to me, until that hour well, when I am ready to lay down my life in conformity with my Father will; I need no one to go with me. The Urantia Book.

There was a 16 year old teenager named John Mark who hung around Jesus' camp, and did errands for the group. He walked up to Jesus with a basket of food and water and suggested that if he planned on being away all day, he might become hungry. Jesus smiled at the lad and reached for the basket. John held onto the basket saying, Master, you might stop to pray, forget, and walk off and leave the basket; perhaps I can go along and hold the basket for you. A group of people standing looked in astonishment as the young man held onto the basket; Jesus looked at the boy and said: [177:1.2] *Since with all your heart you crave to go with me, it shall not be denied you. We will go off by ourselves and have a good visit. You may ask me any question that arises in your heart, and we will comfort and console each other. You may start out carrying the lunch, and when you grow weary, I will help you. Follow on with me.* ' Jesus was a kind and compassionate human being. As they walked along the path, Jesus mentioned to John that he would be a mighty messenger for the Kingdom of God.

Jesus did not return to the camp that day until after sunset. He spent this day of quiet on earth with this truth-seeking youth and talking with his Paradise Father. This event has become known in the higher worlds as the God of this universe (there are other universes according to The Urantia Book, and the scientists of today are on the verge of proving it) spending a day in the hills with a youth. This event forever exemplifies the willingness of the creator of our universe to fellowship with his creation. It shows we can be alone with Jesus in our hill or higher mind.

Early Home Life

[177:2.1] *In the course of this day visiting with John Mark, Jesus spent considerable time comparing their early childhood and later boyhood experiences. Although John's parents possessed more of this world's goods than had Jesus' parents, there was much experience in their boyhood which was very similar. Jesus said many things which helped John better to understand his parents and other members of his family. When the lad asked the Master how he could know that he would turn out to be a "mighty messenger of the kingdom," Jesus said:*

[177:2.2] *I know you will prove loyal to the gospel of the kingdom because I can depend upon your present faith and love when these qualities are grounded upon such an early training as has been your portion at home. You are the product of a home where the parents bear each other a sincere affection, and therefore you have not been overloved so as injuriously to exalt your concept of self-importance. Neither has your personality suffered distortion in consequence of your parents' loveless maneuvering for your confidence and loyalty, the one against the other. You have enjoyed that parental love which ensures laudable self-confidence and which fosters normal feelings of security. But you have also been fortunate in that your parents possessed wisdom as well as love; and it was wisdom which led them to withhold most forms of indulgence and many luxuries which wealth can buy while they sent you to the synagogue school along with your neighborhood playfellows, and they also encouraged you to learn how to live in this world by permitting you to have original experience. You came over to the Jordan, where we preached and John's disciples baptized, with your young friend Amos. Both of you desired to go with us. When you returned to Jerusalem, your parents consented; Amos's parents refused; they loved their son so much that they denied him the blessed experience which you have had, even such as you this day enjoy. By running away from home, Amos could have joined us, but in so doing, he would have wounded love and sacrificed loyalty. Even if such a course had been wise, it would have been a terrible price to pay for experience, independence, and liberty. Wise parents, such as yours, see to it that their children do not have to wound love or stifle loyalty in order to develop independence and enjoy invigorating liberty when they have grown up to your age.*

[177:2.3] *Love, John, is the supreme reality of the universe when bestowed by all-wise beings, but it is a dangerous and oftentimes semi-selfish trait as it is manifested in the experience of mortal parents. When you get married and have children of your own to rear, make sure that your love is admonished by wisdom and guided by intelligence.*

[177:2.4] *Your young friend Amos believes this gospel of the kingdom just as much as you, but I cannot fully depend upon him; I am not certain about what he will do in the years to come. His early home life was not such as would produce a wholly dependable person. Amos is too much like one of the apostles who failed to enjoy a normal, loving, and wise home training. Your whole afterlife will be more happy and dependable because you spent your first eight years in a normal and well-regulated home. You possess a strong and well-knit character because you grew up in a home where love prevailed and wisdom reigned. Such childhood training produces a type of loyalty which assures me that you will go through with the course you have begun.* ²

The apostles spent most of their day walking about Mount Olivet visiting with disciples who were camping with them. Early in the afternoon, they became anxious to see Jesus as they were concerned about his safety, and they felt very lonely without him. There was much talk throughout the day as to whether Jesus should have been allowed to go off into the hills with just a young boy. Although no one said anything out loud, all but Judas wished they were in John Mark's place.

It was around mid-afternoon when Nathaniel gave a speech on "Supreme Desire" to about half of the apostles and many disciples. At the end of his speech, he talked about what was wrong with most of us: –we are halfhearted. We don't love the Master as much as he loves us. If we all wanted to go with him as much as John Mark did, he would have taken us. We stood around while the young lad offered the Master a basket of food and water. When the Master took hold of the basket, the lad wouldn't let go. And so, the Master left us here while he went off into the hills with the young lad. The Urantia Book.

Around four o'clock that afternoon, a runner (a messenger who carried news) came to David Zebedee bringing him a message from his mother and Jesus' mother. Several days before that, David was convinced that the chief priest and rulers were out to kill Jesus. He was sure Jesus would not use his divine power to save himself, nor would he permit his followers to use force to save him. After reaching these conclusions, David sent a messenger to his mother urging her to come to Jerusalem at once and to bring Jesus' mother and all their family with her.

David's mother did what was asked of her, and the runner came back to David and said his mother and Jesus' entire family were on their way to Jerusalem. David did all of this on his own. He thought he should keep it to himself, and he told no one Jesus' entire family was on their way to Jerusalem.

Judas and the Chief Priest

A short time after Jesus and John Mark left the camp; Judas Iscariot disappeared from the camp not returning until late that afternoon. Judas, confused and discontented, went against the master's request not to go to Jerusalem. He made haste to keep an appointment with Jesus' enemies at the home of Caiaphas, the Jews high priest. It was an informal meeting that also included the Sanhedrin and was set for 10 o'clock that morning. This meeting was called to discuss the nature of the complaint which was filed against Jesus and the method to be used to bring him before the Roman authorities to get the necessary civil validation for the death sentence.

The day before, Judas had told some of his relatives and certain Sadducean friends of his father's family that he had concluded that Jesus was a well-meaning dreamer, and he was not the expected Messiah of the Jews. Judas told his family and friends that he was trying to find a graceful way to withdraw from the group. His friends convinced him that the Jewish rulers would praise his withdrawal as a great event. They made him believe he would receive high honors from the Sanhedrin, and he would be able to erase the stains from his association with untaught heathens.

Judas convinced the Jewish rulers would defeat Jesus and his group, and he didn't want to be identified with a movement that was crushed. Judas entertained the suggestion of one of his relatives that Jesus was a well-meaning fanatic but was probably not sound of mind. He always seemed to be a strange and misunderstood person.

Now Judas found himself being resentful that Jesus never assigned him to a job of more importance; although he appreciated being the Apostolic treasurer, he began to feel that he was not appreciated. He found himself overcome with anger towards Peter, James, and John because of their closeness to Jesus; and he was jealous. On the way to the high priest's home, it was his opportunity to get even with Peter, James, and John, more so than being concerned with the thought of betraying Jesus. Right then, a new idea came to his mind; that he could get even with those who had contributed to the greatest disappointment of his life. So, it must be plain to everyone, it was not for money that Judas was on his way to Caiaphas, the high priest's home, to arrange for Jesus's betrayal; it was revenge.

As he reached the home of Caiaphas, Judas arrived at his final decision to withdraw from Jesus and his fellow apostles. Having made up his mind to desert the cause of the Kingdom of Heaven, he was determined to gain for himself as much as possible that honor and glory he thought he'd have when he joined Jesus and his fellow apostles. All the apostles once shared this ambition with Judas, but as time went by, they learned to love truth and love Jesus, at least more than Judas did.

The betrayer was introduced to Caiaphas and the Jewish rulers by his cousin, who explained that Judas had discovered his mistake of allowing himself to be misguided by the subtle teachings of Jesus. And he had reached the decision that he wished to make public the announcement of this mistake and the renunciation of any connection with the Galilean. He asked for his reinstatement in the confidence and fellowship of his Judean Brethren's. Judas' cousin went on to say that Judas felt it would be best if Jesus taken into custody for the peace of Israel. And as evidence of his remorse for the mistake he had made in participating with such a group, he offered his service to the Sanhedrin in arresting Jesus peacefully. When his cousin finished speaking, he presented Judas. Stepping up to the high priest, Judas told them: All that my cousin promised, I will do." And he asked, "But what are you willing to give me for my service. The Urantia Book. Judas didn't seem to notice a look of contempt come over the face of the high and mighty vainglorious Caiaphas; his heart was too set on self-glory and craving for self-satisfaction.

Caiaphas, looking down on the betrayer told Judas to go with the captain of the guard and arrange with this officer to bring in Jesus that night or tomorrow night. And when you deliver him into our hands, then you will receive your reward. The Urantia Book.

Judas left the home of the high priest and went with the captain of the temple guard to discuss Jesus' apprehension. Judas knew Jesus left camp early that day and had no idea when he would be back, so they arranged to arrest Jesus the following night.

Judas returned to the camp of Jesus late that afternoon, overjoyed with thoughts of grandeur and glory that he hadn't had in many days. He realized that there would be no kingdom of heaven as he had conceived it. Judas didn't know it at the time, but he was an unconscious critic of Jesus ever since Herod beheaded John the Baptist. Judas always resented the fact that Jesus didn't save John. Judas had been a follower of John before joining up with Jesus. He was now saturated with jealousy and overcome with resentment.

It was the Wednesday evening social hour at camp, and the Master tried to cheer up his downhearted apostles, but that was just about impossible. They were beginning to sense something awful was impending. They could not be cheerful, even when Jesus recalled their memorable and loving experiences. Jesus asked about each of the apostles' families. Looking at David Zebedee, he wondered if anyone had heard from his mother and family recently. David looked down at his feet for he was afraid to answer.

Even Jesus' cheerfulness and unusual sociability frightened the apostles. They all had a sense that something terrible was just ahead and none felt prepared to face the test. Jesus had been away all day, and they had missed him greatly. This Wednesday evening was the lowest of their spiritual status up to the actual hour of the Master's death. The next day was one more day closer to that awful Friday; still, he was with them, and they passed through the hour more gracefully.

It was a little before midnight when Jesus, knowing this would be the last night he would sleep through with his chosen family on earth, told them to go and rest, for tomorrow is one more day of doing the Father will, and the joy of knowing we are his son. The Urantia Book.

Jesus had planned on spending this Thursday, his last free day on earth as a divine Son incarnated in the flesh, with his apostles and a few of his devoted disciples. On this beautiful morning, soon after breakfast, Jesus led them to a secluded place a short distance from their camp and he taught them many new truths. The twelve were all present except for Judas. Peter and several of the others mentioned his absence; they assumed Jesus had sent him into the city to prepare for the celebration of the Passover. But Judas did not return to the camp until mid-afternoon, a short time before Jesus had led the twelve into Jerusalem for the Last Supper. At this gathering, among other things, Jesus said to the group:

[178:1.15] This gospel of the kingdom is a living truth. I have told you it is like the leaven in the dough, like the grain of mustard seed; and now I declare that it is like the seed of the living being, which, from generation to generation, while it remains the same living seed, unfailingly unfolds itself in new manifestations and grows acceptably in channels of new adaptation to the peculiar needs and conditions of each successive generation. The revelation I have made to you is a living revelation, and I desire that it shall bear appropriate fruits in each individual and in each generation in accordance with the laws of spiritual growth, increase, and adaptative development. From generation to generation this gospel must show increasing vitality and exhibit greater depth of spiritual power. It must not be permitted to become merely a sacred memory, a mere tradition about me and the times in which we now live. ³

Jesus was saying that our religion must evolve just like everything else in life. We can't keep hanging onto that old-time religion and expect to move forward. Over and over, you hear people crying out, "Help me, Lord." But their vibration prevents it; they are not making the connection. When Jesus concluded his teachings, it was about one o'clock in the afternoon, and when they returned, David and his group had lunch prepared for them.

After the Noontime Meal

[178:2.1] Not many of the Master's hearers were able to take in even a part of his forenoon address. Of all who heard him, the Greeks comprehended most. Even the eleven apostles were bewildered by his allusions to future political kingdoms and to successive generations of kingdom believers. Jesus' most devoted followers could not reconcile the impending end of his earthly ministry with these references to an extended future of gospel activities. Some of these Jewish believers were beginning to sense that earth's greatest tragedy was about to take place, but they could not reconcile such an impending disaster with either the Master's cheerfully indifferent personal attitude or his forenoon discourse, wherein he repeatedly alluded to the future transactions of the heavenly kingdom, extending over vast stretches of time and embracing relations with many and successive temporal kingdoms on earth. ⁴

By the noontime meal, David Zebedee, through the work of his secret agent in Jerusalem, was fully advised concerning the arrest and killing of Jesus. David was aware of the part Judas had played in the scheme, but never disclosed this knowledge to any of the apostles or disciples. Shortly after lunch he did lead Jesus aside and asked Jesus if he knew—but he never got any further, because Jesus stopped him, saying: *Yes, David, I know all about it, and I know that you know, but see to it that you tell no man. Only doubt not in your own heart that the will of God will prevail in the end.*

*[178:2.4] This conversation with David was interrupted by the arrival of a messenger from Philadelphia bringing word that Abner (Abner was a disciple of Jesus working out of Philadelphia) had heard of the plot to kill Jesus and asking if he should depart for Jerusalem. This runner hastened off for Philadelphia with this word for Abner: "Go on with your work. If I depart from you in the flesh, it is only that I may return in the spirit. I will not forsake you. I will be with you to the end."*⁵

About this time Philip (one of Jesus' Apostles), approached Jesus and mentioned to him that the Passover was drawing near. *[178:2.5] Where you would have us prepare for it?" When Jesus heard Philip question, he answered: Go and bring Peter and John, and I will give you direction concerning the supper we will eat together this night; as for the Passover that you will have to consider after we have first done this.*⁶

Judas saw Philip speaking about these things to Jesus, and he tried to get closer so he could hear their conversation, but David Zebedee, who was standing nearby, engaged Judas in a conversation while Peter, John, and Philip went to one side to speak with Jesus.

Jesus told them to go right away to Jerusalem, and: *As you enter the gate, you will meet with a man with a water pitcher. He will speak to you, and then you should follow him. He would lead you to a certain house, go in after him and asked the man of the house, where is the room that the Master is to eat supper with his apostles? The householder will then show you a large upper room ready for this service. The Urantia Book.*

At the home of John Mark's parents, all of this came about because of a conversation between Jesus and John Mark during the afternoon of the proceeding day when they were alone in the hills. Jesus wanted to be sure he would have his last supper undisturbed with his apostles. He didn't wish Judas to know beforehand of their meeting place, and he was afraid Judas would tell his enemies to take him while they had their last meal. In this way, Judas did not learn of their place of meeting until later in the company of Jesus and the other apostles.

It was about four-thirty in the afternoon, when the three apostles returned and informed Jesus that everything was ready for the supper. Right away, Jesus prepared to lead his twelve apostles over the trail to Bethany Road and on into Jerusalem; this was the last journey he ever made with all twelve of them.

On the Way to the Last Supper

After they had been on the road for a while, Jesus said to the twelve: *[178:3.2] Sit down and rest yourselves while I talk with you about what must shortly come to pass. All these years have I lived with you as brethren, and I have taught you the truth concerning the kingdom of heaven and have revealed to you the mysteries thereof. And my Father has indeed done many wonderful works in connection with my mission on earth. You have been witnesses of all this and partakers in the experience of being laborers together with God. And you will bear me witness that I have for some time warned you that I must presently return to the work the Father has given me to do; I have plainly told you that I must leave you in the world to carry on the work of the kingdom. It was for this purpose that I set you apart, in the hills of Capernaum. The experience you have had with me,*

you must now make ready to share with others. As the Father sent me into this world, so am I about to send you forth to represent me and finish the work I have begun. ⁷

Beginning the Supper

After receiving a warm welcome from John Mark's parents into their home, the apostles went directly to the room they were to eat their supper, and Jesus lingered behind to talk to the Mark family. It's understood beforehand that Jesus wanted to celebrate this time alone with his apostles, so there were no servants provided to wait upon them.

John Mark escorted the apostles to a large room which was furnished entirely for supper, and they saw that everything was ready. This long table was surrounded by 13 reclining couches, just as though it was the celebration of the Passover in a wealthy Jewish home.

As the twelve entered the room, they noticed just inside the door, a pitcher, basin, and towels for washing their dusty feet; and since there was no servant provided to render this service, the apostles began to look at each other soon as John Mark left the room. They thought to themselves, who's going to wash our feet? No one wanted to act as a servant.

As they stood debating in their hearts, they looked over the table setting arrangements and noticed the higher couch of the host, one couch on the right and eleven arranged around the table on up to the second seat of honor on the host's left.

They expected any moment for Jesus to walk in, as they stood in a state of uncertainty, whether to sit down or wait for Jesus to assign them their seats. As they hesitated, Judas stepped over to the left seat of honor and indicated he was sitting there as the preferred guest. It began a heated dispute among the other apostles. John Zebedee claimed the other seat of honor on the right. Simon Peter was so irritated at Judas and John Zebedee for assuming they had the rights to those choice positions, and as the other angry apostles looked on, he marched around the table and took his place on the lowest couch at the end of the seating order. Since the others had taken the choice seat, Peter figured he would take the lowest position, and hoped when Jesus came and saw him in the lowest position, he would give him one of the places of honor. (All this goes to show the apostles were human also).

The apostles were all engaged in voicing their annoyance when Jesus appeared in the doorway, he stood for a moment, and a look of disappointment appeared on his face. They were now ready to eat their supper except their feet had not been washed, and they were not in a good frame of mind. When Jesus walked into the room, they were still making uncomplimentary remarks about each other. You would think those who had been with Jesus for so many years would refrain from publicly expressing their feelings.

For a few minutes after Jesus had taken his seat not a word was spoken. He looked them all over and finally relieved the tension with a smile said: [179:2.1] *I have greatly desired to eat this Passover with you. I wanted to eat with you once more before I suffered, and realizing that my hour has come, I arranged to have this supper with you tonight, for, as concerns the morrow, we are all in the hands of the Father, whose will I have come to execute. I shall not again eat with you until you sit down with me in the kingdom which my Father will give me when I have finished that for which he sent me into this world.* ⁸

After the wine and water had been mixed, and Jesus received it from Thaddeus, he held it while he offered thanks, and when he finished, he said: [179:2.2] *Take this cup and divide among yourselves, and when you partake of it, realize that I shall not again drink with the fruit of the vine since this is our last supper. When we sit down in this manner, it will be in the kingdom to come.*⁹

Jesus began to talk to his apostles because he knew his time had come for him to return to the Father; that his work on earth was almost finished. Jesus knew he had revealed the Father's love on earth and had shown the Father's mercy to humanity. And he had completed what he had come into the world to do, even receiving all power and authority in heaven and on earth. He also was aware Judas Iscariot had made up his mind to deliver him into the hands of his enemies that night. He also realized this traitorous betrayal was the work of Judas, but it pleased, the once princes of this world, Lucifer, and Satan. Jesus feared none of those who sought his spiritual overthrow, no more than he feared those who sought his physical demise. The Master had one concern; his followers would be safe.

Washing the Apostle's Feet

It was a Jewish custom at Passover meal after drinking the first cup, for the host to arise from the table and wash his hands. Later, in the meal, and after the second cup, all the guests rose up and washed their hands. The apostles knew that Jesus never observed these rites of ceremonial hand washing, so they were curious to know what he planned after drinking the first cup. After he had drunk the first cup, Jesus rose from the table and went over to the door where the water, pitchers, basins, and towels were placed. Their curiosity turned into amazement as they saw the Master remove his outer garment and put on an apron and began to pour the water into one of the feet basins. Can you imagine the astonishment of the twelve who so recently refused to wash each other's feet and had unseemly disputes over the position at the table? They watched Jesus walk over to the end of the table to the lowest set of the feast, where Simon Peter sat, and knelt to wash Simon's feet. As Jesus knelt, all twelve rose as though they were one rising to their feet. Even the traitorous Judas forgot his evilness for a moment to rise with his fellow apostles in their expression of surprise, respect, and amazement.

Peter stood looking down into the upturned face of his Master. Jesus said nothing as it wasn't necessary for him to speak. Peter loved Jesus; this Galilean fisherman was the first human being who wholeheartedly believed in the divinity of Jesus and to make a public confession of his belief.

[179:3.3] *After a few moments of this great embarrassment, Peter said, Master, do you really mean to wash my feet? And then, looking up into Peter's face, Jesus said: You may not fully understand what I am about to do, but here after you will know the meaning of all these things. Then Simon Peter, drawing a long breath, said, "Master, you shall never wash my feet!" And each of the apostles nodded their approval of Peter's firm declaration of refusal to allow Jesus thus to humble himself before them.*¹⁰

The dramatic demonstration of this unusual scene even touched the heart of Judas Iscariot; but when his vainglorious intellect passed judgment on the scene, he concluded that this gesture of humility conclusively proved that Jesus would never qualify as the Messiah, the deliverer of the Jews and he made no mistake in deserting the Master's cause.

[197:3.5] *As they all stood there in breathless amazement, Jesus said: "Peter, I declare that, if I do not wash your feet, you will have no part with me in that which I am about to perform." When Peter heard this declaration, coupled with the fact that Jesus continued kneeling there at his*

feet, he made one of those decisions of blind acquiescence in compliance with the wish of one whom he respected and loved. As it began to dawn on Simon Peter that there was attached to this proposed enactment of service some signification that determined one's future connection with the Master's work, he not only became reconciled to the thought of allowing Jesus to wash his feet but, in his characteristic and impetuous manner, said: "Then, Master, wash not my feet only but also my hands and my head. "

Jesus went around the table in silence washing the feet of all twelve of his apostles, not even passing over Judas. When he had finished washing the feet of his apostles, he put his outer garment on and went back to his place as host. After looking over his confused apostles, he said:

[179:3.8] Do you really understand what I have done to you? You call me Master, and you say well, for so I am. If, then, the Master has washed your feet, why was it that you were unwilling to wash one another's feet? What lesson should you learn from this parable in which the Master so willingly does that service which his brethren were unwilling to do for one another? Verily, verily, I say to you: A servant is not greater than his master; neither is one who is sent greater than he who sends him. You have seen the way of service in my life among you and blessed are you who will have the gracious courage so to serve. But why are you so slow to learn that the secret of greatness in the spiritual kingdom is not like the methods of power in the material world? ¹²

[197:3.9] When I came into this chamber tonight, you were not content proudly to refuse to wash one another's feet, but you must also fall to disputing among yourselves as to who should have the places of honor at my table. Such honors the Pharisees and the children of this world seek, but it should not be so among the ambassadors of the heavenly kingdom. Do you not know that there can be no place of preferment at my table? Do you not understand that I love each of you as I do the others? Do you not know that the place nearest me, as men regard such honors, can mean nothing concerning your standing in the kingdom of heaven? You know that the kings of the gentiles have lordship over their subjects, while those who exercise this authority are sometimes called benefactors. But it shall not be so in the kingdom of heaven. He who would be great among you, let him become as the younger; while he who would be chief, let him become as one who serves. Who is the greater, he who sits at meat, or he who serves? Is it not commonly regarded that he who sits at meat is the greater? But you will observe that I am among you as one who serves. If you are willing to become fellow servants with me in doing the Father's will, in the kingdom to come, you shall sit with me in power, still doing the Father's will in future glory. ¹³

When Jesus stopped speaking, the Alpheus twins (two of Jesus' apostles who were twins) brought on the bread and wine with the bitter herbs and paste of dried fruits for the next course of the Last Supper.

Last Words to the Betrayer

For a while, the apostles ate in silence, but under Jesus' cheerful demeanor, they soon started a conversation; and before long, the meal was proceeding as though nothing had happened that would interfere with this special occasion. After some time had gone by, in about midway of the second course of the meal, Jesus, looking them over, said. *[179:4.1] I have told you how much I desired to have this supper with you, and knowing how the evil forces of darkness have conspired to bring about the death of the Son of Man, I determined to eat this supper with you in this secret chamber and a day in advance of the Passover since I will not be with you by this time tomorrow night. I have repeatedly told you that I must return to the Father. Now has my hour come, but it was not required that one of you should betray me into the hands of my enemies.*

*[179:4.2] When the twelve heard this, having already been robbed of much of their self-assertiveness and self-confidence by the parable of the feet washing and the Master's subsequent discourse, they began to look at one another while in disconcerted tones they hesitatingly inquired, "Is it I?" And when they had all so inquired, Jesus said: "While it is necessary that I go to the Father, it was not required that one of you should become a traitor to fulfill the Father's will. This is the coming to fruit of the concealed evil in the heart of one who failed to love the truth with his whole soul. How deceitful is the intellectual pride that precedes the spiritual downfall! My friend of many years, who even now eats my bread, will be willing to betray me, even as he now dips his hand with me in the dish."*¹⁴

When Jesus finished speaking the apostles were curious and again asked, "Is it I?" After a few minutes, Judas, sitting on the left of Jesus, again asked, "Is it I?"

*[179:4.6] When Jesus had thus spoken, leaning over toward Judas, he said: "What you have decided to do, do quickly." And when Judas heard these words, he arose from the table and hastily left the room, going out into the night to do what he had set his mind to accomplish. When the other apostles saw Judas hasten off after Jesus had spoken to him, they thought he had gone to procure something additional for the supper or to do some other errand for the Master since they supposed he still carried the bag."*¹⁵

Establishing the Remembrance Supper

[197:5.1] As they brought Jesus the third cup of wine, the "cup of blessing," he arose from the couch and, taking the cup in his hands, blessed it, saying: "Take this cup, all of you, and drink of it. This shall be the cup of my remembrance. This is the cup of the blessing of a new dispensation of grace and truth. This shall be to you the emblem of the bestowal and ministry of the divine Spirit of Truth. And I will not again drink this cup with you until I drink in new form with you in the Father's eternal kingdom."

*[179:5.2] The apostles all sensed that something out of the ordinary was transpiring as they drank of this cup of blessing in profound reverence and perfect silence. The old Passover commemorated the emergence of their fathers from a state of racial slavery into individual freedom; now the Master was instituting a new remembrance supper as a symbol of the new dispensation wherein the enslaved individual emerges from the bondage of ceremonialism and selfishness into the spiritual joy of the brotherhood and fellowship of the liberated faith sons of the living God."*¹⁶

In Gethsemane

It was about ten o'clock that Thursday night when Jesus and the eleven left the home of Elijah and Mary Mark on their way back to their Gethsemane camp. Since the day in the hills with Jesus, John Mark made it his business to keep a watchful eye on him. While Jesus and the apostles were eating in the upper room, John Mark slept for a couple of hours, which he needed; when he heard them coming downstairs, he got up and followed them to their camp, adjacent to Gethsemane Park. John Mark remained close to the Master throughout the night, and the next day, he was a witness to everything in the hour of his crucifixion.

As Jesus and the eleven apostles started walking on the path to Gethsemane, they wondered what was taking Judas so long. Then they started talking about Jesus' prediction about one of them betraying him. For the first time, they realized all was not well with Judas. But they didn't make open comments about Judas until they reached the camp and saw that he was not there. They all asked Andrew, the chief apostle, where was Judas; he said he did not know, but he suspected he had deserted them.

The Last Group Prayer

[182:1.1] *A few moments after arriving at camp, Jesus said to them: “My friends and brethren, my time with you is now very short, and I desire that we draw apart by ourselves while we pray to our Father in heaven for strength to sustain us in this hour and henceforth in all the work we must do in his name.”*

[182:1.2] *When Jesus had thus spoken, he led the way a short distance up on Olivet, and in full view of Jerusalem he bade them kneel on a large flat rock in a circle about him as they had done on the day of their ordination; and then, as he stood there in the midst of them glorified in the mellow moonlight, he lifted up his eyes toward heaven and prayed:*

182:1.3] *“Father, my hour has come; now glorify your Son that the Son may glorify you. I know that you have given me full authority over all living creatures in my realm, and I will give eternal life to all who will become faith sons of God. And this is eternal life, that my creatures should know you as the only true God and Father of all, and that they should believe in him whom you sent into the world. Father, I have exalted you on earth and have accomplished the work which you gave me to do. I have almost finished my bestowal upon the children of our own creation; there remains only for me to lay down my life in the flesh. And now, O my Father, glorify me with the glory which I had with you before this world was and receive me once more at your right hand.*

[182:1.4] *I have manifested you to the men whom you chose from the world and gave to me. They are yours — as all life is in your hands — you gave them to me, and I have lived among them, teaching them the way of life, and they have believed. These men are learning that all I have comes from you, and that the life I live in the flesh is to make known my Father to the worlds. The truth which you have given to me I have revealed to them. These, my friends and ambassadors, have sincerely willed to receive your word. I have told them that I came forth from you, that you sent me into this world, and that I am about to return to you. Father, I do pray for these chosen men. And I pray for them not as I would pray for the world, but as for those whom I have chosen out of the world to represent me to the world after I have returned to your work, even as I have represented you in this world during my sojourn in the flesh. These men are mine; you gave them to me; but all things which are mine are ever yours, and all that which was yours you have now caused to be mine. You have been exalted in me, and I now pray that I may be honored in these men. I can no longer be in this world; I am about to return to the work you have given me to do. I must leave these men behind to represent us and our kingdom among men. Father, keep these men faithful as I prepare to yield up my life in the flesh. Help these, my friends, to be one in spirit, even as we are one. As long as I could be with them, I could watch over them and guide them, but now am I about to go away. Be near them, Father, until we can send the new teacher to comfort and strengthen them.*

182:1.5] *You gave me twelve men, and I have kept them all save one, the son of revenge, who would not have further fellowship with us. These men are weak and frail, but I know we can trust them; I have proved them; they love me, even as they reverence you. While they must suffer much for my sake, I desire that they should also be filled with the joy of the assurance of sonship in the heavenly kingdom. I have given these men your word and have taught them the truth. The world may hate them, even as it has hated me, but I do not ask that you take them out of the world, only that you keep them from the evil in the world. Sanctify them in the truth; your word is truth. And as you sent me into this world, even so, am I about to send these men into the world. For their sakes, I have lived among men and have consecrated my life to your service that I might*

inspire them to be purified through the truth I have taught them and the love I have revealed to them. I well know, my Father, that there is no need for me to ask you to watch over these brethren after I have gone; I know you love them even as I, but I do this that they may the better realize the Father loves mortal men even as does the Son.

182:1.6] And now, my Father, I would pray not only for these eleven men but also for all others who now believe, or who may hereafter believe the gospel of the kingdom through the word of their future ministry. I want them all to be one, even as you and I are one. You are in me, and I am in you, and I desire that these believers likewise be in us; that both of our spirits indwell them. If my children are one as we are one, and if they love one another as I have loved them, all men will then believe that I came forth from you and be willing to receive the revelation of truth and glory which I have made. The glory which you gave me I have revealed to these believers. As you have lived with me in spirit, so have I lived with them in the flesh. As you have been one with me, so have I been one with them, and so will the new teacher ever be one with them and in them. And all this have I done that my brethren in the flesh may know that the Father loves them even as does the Son and that you love them even as you love me. Father, work with me to save these believers that they may presently come to be with me in glory and then go on to join you in the Paradise embrace. Those who serve with me in humiliation, I would have with me in glory so that they may see all you have given into my hands as the eternal harvest of the seed sowing of time in the likeness of mortal flesh. I long to show my earthly brethren the glory I had with you before the founding of this world. This world knows very little of you, righteous Father, but I know you, and I have made you known to these believers, and they will make known your name to other generations. And now I promise them that you will be with them in the world even as you have been with me — even so.¹⁷

Alone In Gethsemane

After things were still and quiet about the camp, Jesus taking Peter, James, and John, went a short way up a nearby gorge where he had often gone and communed with God. The three apostles couldn't help but recognize that Jesus was much oppressed' they had never seen him so depressed. When they arrived at the place Jesus liked to pray, he told the three to sit down and watch with him while he walked off about a stone's throw to pray. And as he had fallen on his face, he prayed: [182:3.1] *My Father, I came into this world to do your will, and so have I. I know that the hour has come to lay down this life in the flesh, and I do not shrink therefrom, but I would know that it is your will that I drink this cup. Send me the assurance that I will please you in my death even as I have in my life.*¹⁸

Jesus remained in prayer for a few moments, then going to the three apostles, he found they were sound asleep; their eyes were heavy, and they could not remain awake. As Jesus awoke them, he said: [182:3.2] *What! Can you not watch with me even for one hour? Cannot you see that my soul is exceedingly sorrowful, even to death, and that I crave your companionship?" After the three had aroused from their slumber, the Master again went apart by himself and, falling down on the ground, again prayed: "Father, I know it is possible to avoid this cup — all things are possible with you — but I have come to do your will, and while this is a bitter cup, I would drink it if it is your will." And when he had thus prayed, a mighty angel came down by his side and, speaking to him, touched him and strengthened him.*

[182:3.3] When Jesus returned to speak with the three apostles, he again found them fast asleep. He awakened them, saying: "In such an hour I need that you should watch and pray with me — all the more do you need to pray that you enter not into temptation — wherefore do you fall asleep when I leave you?"

[182:3.4] And then, for a third time, the Master withdrew and prayed: "Father, you see my sleeping apostles; have mercy upon them. The spirit is indeed willing, but the flesh is weak. And now, O Father, if this cup may not pass, then would I drink it. Not my will, but yours, be done." And when he had finished praying, he lay for a moment prostrate on the ground. When he arose and went back to his apostles, once more he found them asleep. He surveyed them and, with a pitying gesture, tenderly said: "Sleep on now and take your rest; the time of decision is past. The hour is now upon us wherein the Son of Man will be betrayed into the hands of his enemies." As he reached down to shake them that he might awaken them, he said: "Arise, let us be going back to the camp, for, behold, he who betrays me is at hand, and the hour has come when my flock shall be scattered. But I have already told you about these things."¹⁹

The Betrayer and the Arrest of Jesus

After Jesus had finally awakened Peter, James, and John, he suggested they go to their tents and get some sleep, so that they would be ready for the next day's duties. But now the three were wide awake as they had rested from their short naps, they were excited by the two messengers who had entered the camp and asked for David Zebedee. Peter told them where he was keeping watch.

Although the eight apostles were sound asleep, the Greeks camped next to them were so fearful of trouble they posted a guard to give the alarm in case of danger. When these two messengers entered the camp, the Greek guard woke up all his countrymen they ran from their tents entirely dressed and armed. All the camp was now awake except the eight apostles. Peter was going to wake them, but Jesus forbade him. Jesus suggested they go to their tents, but they were reluctant to go. Jesus left his followers and walked down to the Olive Press, near the entrance to Gethsemane Park. The three apostles, the Greeks, and others member of the camp followed him; but John Mark went another way through olive trees and hid in a small shed near the Olive Press.

Jesus left the camp, so when they came to arrest him, they would not disturb his apostles. He was afraid that if the apostles were awakened at the time of his arrest, seeing Judas betraying him would infuriate the apostles and they would resist the soldiers and be arrested along with him and share his fate.

Jesus knew the plans for his death started with the councils of the rulers of the Jews; he was also aware that all such evil doings had the full approval of Lucifer, Caligastia (the one Jesus called the prince of this world in John 12:31) and Satan. He also was aware that they wanted to see all of the apostles destroyed with him. So, Jesus sat alone on the Olive Press where no one saw him but John Mark and a host of celestial beings.

The Father's Will

[183:1.1] There is great danger of misunderstanding the meaning of numerous sayings and many events associated with the termination of the master's career in the flesh. The cruel treatment of Jesus by the ignorant servants and the calloused soldiers, the unfair conduct of his trials, and the unfeeling attitude of the professed religious leaders, must not be confused with the fact that Jesus, in patiently submitting to all this

suffering and humiliation, was truly doing the will of the Father in Paradise. It was, indeed and in truth, the will of the Father that his Son should drink to the full the cup of mortal experience, from birth to death, but the Father in heaven had nothing whatever to do with instigating the barbarous behavior of those supposedly civilized human beings who so brutally tortured the Master and so horribly heaped successive indignities upon his nonresisting person. These inhuman and shocking experiences which Jesus was called upon to endure in the final hours of his mortal life were not in any sense a part of the divine will of the Father, which his human nature had so triumphantly pledged to carry out at the time of the final surrender of man to God as signified in the threefold prayer which he indited in the garden while his weary apostles slept the sleep of physical exhaustion.

183:1.2] The Father in heaven desired the bestowal Son to finish his earth career naturally, just as all mortals must finish up their lives on earth and in the flesh. Ordinary men and women cannot expect to have their last hours on earth and the supervening episode of death made easy by a special dispensation. Accordingly, Jesus elected to lay down his life in the flesh in the manner which was in keeping with the outworking of natural events, and he steadfastly refused to extricate himself from the cruel clutches of a wicked conspiracy of inhuman events which swept on with horrible certainty toward his unbelievable humiliation and ignominious death. And every bit of all this astounding manifestation of hatred and this unprecedented demonstration of cruelty was the work of evil men and wicked mortals. God in heaven did not will it, neither did the archenemies of Jesus dictate it, though they did much to ensure that unthinking and evil mortals would thus reject the bestowal, Son. Even the father of sin turned his face away from the excruciating horror of the scene of the crucifixion. ²⁰

After Judas suddenly left the table while eating the Last Supper, he went directly to the home of his cousin. Then, the two of them went straight to the captain of the temple guards. Judas asked the captain of the guards to get ready his temple guards as he was ready to lead them to Jesus. Judas appeared earlier than he expected, so there was some delay getting started to Marks' home, where Judas expected to find Jesus, and his eleven apostles were still visiting. The Master and his apostles left the Mark home fifteen minutes before Judas, and the guards had arrived. By the time the betrayer and the guards reached the Mark home, Jesus and the eleven were well outside of the wall of the city and on their way back to their camp.

Judas was very disturbed at their failure to find Jesus at the Mark home and in the company of the eleven apostles; only two of them were armed for resistance. Judas knew that afternoon that only Peter and Simon Zelotes were armed with swords. Judas hoped to take Jesus when the city was quiet, and there was little chance of resistance. Judas was afraid that if they waited until they returned to their camp, more than sixty devoted disciples would be there, and he also knew Simon Zelotes had access to stored arms.

As he thought about how the other apostles would detest him, Judas was becoming very nervous he feared they would try to kill him. He was not only disloyal but also a real coward. When they failed to find Jesus in the upper room, Judas asked the captain of the guard to return to the temple. By this time, the rulers of the Jews the Sanhedrin and Pharisees had started to gather at the high priest's home to prepare for receiving Jesus. Their bargain with the traitor called for Jesus to be arrested by midnight of that day.

Judas explained to his associates that they had missed Jesus at the Mark home, and it would be necessary for them to go to Gethsemane to arrest him. The betrayer went on to say there were 60 devoted followers of Jesus at the camp and all were armed. The rulers of the Jews

reminded Judas that Jesus always preached nonviolence; Judas replied they could not rely on all of Jesus' followers to go along with that. But he genuinely feared for his hide and asked for the company of 40 soldiers. The Jewish authorities did not have such a force under their power, so they went at once to the fortress of Antonia and asked the Roman commander for these soldiers. But when Antonia learned that they intended to arrest Jesus, he refused and referred them to his superior. They finally had to go to Pontius Pilate.

It was late when they arrived at Pilate's house, and Pilate had retired for the night to his chambers with his wife. At first, he hesitated about having anything to do with the arrest of Jesus since his wife had asked him not to grant the request. But since the presiding officer of the Jewish Sanhedrin was present, the governor thought it wise to grant the request.

Judas started out around 11:30 pm with about sixty people accompanying him: temple guards, Roman soldiers and curious servants of the chief priest and rulers. And so, this group carrying torches and lanterns approached Gethsemane Garden. Judas stepped well in front of the group so that he could identify Jesus quickly and the apprehenders could promptly arrest him before Jesus' followers could rally to his defense. Another reason Judas decided to arrive at the garden before the soldiers, where he wanted it to appear he was ahead of the soldiers to warn Jesus and the others, apostles. But his scheming didn't work; although Jesus greeted Judas with kindness, he greeted him as a traitor.

As soon as Peter, James, and John, with about 30 of their campers, saw the armed band with torches and lanterns swing around the bottom of the hill, they knew they were soldiers coming to arrest Jesus, they all ran down to the Olive Press where Jesus was sitting in the moonlight alone. As the company of soldiers approached on one side, the three apostles approached the other side. Judas stepped forward and stood in front of Jesus; the two groups stood motionless. Jesus was in between the two groups, and Judas was getting ready to place the traitorous kiss upon Jesus' brow.

After leading the soldiers to Gethsemane, Judas wished he could point Jesus out to the soldiers, or at most carry out his promise to greet him with a kiss, then quickly leave the scene. Judas was afraid all the present apostles would attack him for betraying their beloved teacher. But when the Master Jesus greeted him as a traitor, Judas was so confused and did not attempt to flee.

Jesus made one last effort to save Judas before the traitor betrayed him; before Judas could reach him, Jesus called out to the soldiers on his left saying to the captain once again, [183:3.4] *Who do you seek?* "The captain answered, *"Jesus of Nazareth. Stepping in front of the captain, standing there in majestic splendor of the God of this creation, Jesus said "I am he. "*²¹ Many of these soldiers and guards had heard Jesus teach in the temple, and others had heard about his great works. When they heard him bravely announce his identity, those in the front rank suddenly fell backward. They were awed and surprised at his calm and splendid announcement of his identity. There was no need for Judas to conduct his betrayal. Jesus had boldly presented himself to his enemies, and they could take him without Judas' help. But the traitor had to account for his presence there, and he wanted to keep his bargain with the rulers of the Jews. He wanted to receive his great reward and the honor he thought would be given to him in payment for his promise to deliver Jesus into their hands.

As the soldiers regrouped themselves from the dominant impression of Jesus' presence and the sound of his unusual voice, Judas walked up to Jesus, and placing a kiss upon his brow, said: [183:3.5] *Hail Master and teacher. And as Judas hugged the Master, Jesus said: "Friend, is it enough to do this? Would you even betray the Son of Man with a kiss?"*²²

The apostles and disciples were shocked at what they had seen. For a while, no one moved. Then Jesus pushed himself free from the traitor's grip and stepped up to the guards and soldiers and again asked: [183:3.6] *Who do you seek?" and again the captain said: Jesus of Nazareth. And he again answered: I have told you that I am he. If therefore, you seek me, let these others go their way. I am ready to go with you.* ²³ The captain was willing to let the three apostles and their associates go their way in peace.

But before they started, as Jesus stood waiting for the captain's orders, one of the bodyguards of the high priest named Malchus stepped up to Jesus and was ready to bind Jesus' hands behind him; the Roman captain had told no one to bind Jesus. When Peter and the remainder of Jesus' followers saw their Master being subjected to such humiliation, they were no longer able to restrain themselves. Peter drew his sword and with the others rushed forward to strike Malchus. But before the soldiers could come to the defense of the high priest servant, Jesus raised a forbidding hand and speaking sternly, said: [183:3.7] *Peter, put up your sword. They who take the sword shall perish by the sword. Do you not understand that it is the Father's will that I drink this cup? And do you not further know that I could even now command more than twelve legions of angels and their associates, who would deliver me from the hands of these few men?* ²⁴

Jesus put a stop to the physical resistance by his followers. However, their display of resistance aroused the fear of the captain of the soldiers who had already quickly bound Jesus.

After Jesus was bound, the captain, fearing Jesus' followers would try to rescue him, gave orders that the followers are seized; but the soldiers were not quick enough. Peter and his associates overheard the captain's orders to arrest them, and they quickly ran back into the gorge. During this time, John Mark remained hidden in the nearby shed. When the guards started back to Jerusalem with Jesus, John Mark attempted to sneak out of the shed to catch up with the apostles and disciples. But just as he came out of the shed, one of the last returning soldiers who had run after the disciples, saw him coming out of the shed and started chasing him.

The soldier got close enough to grab Mark's coat, but the young man freed himself by removing the jacket and ran naked while the soldier held the empty jacket. John Mark caught up with David Zebedee on the upper trail. When he told all that had happened, they both hurried back to the tents of the sleeping apostles and informed them of the Master's betrayal and arrest. At about the same time the eight apostles were being awakened, those who had fled up the ravine were returning. They all gathered by the Olive Press to discuss what could be done about Jesus' arrest. (They were all confused, as it was difficult for them to believe this was happening.) While this was going on, Peter and John Zebedee who had hidden among the olive trees had already gone after the soldiers and guards who were now leading Jesus back to Jerusalem as though he were a dangerous criminal. John followed close behind the group, but Peter kept his distance.

After John Mark had escaped from the soldiers, he went into Peter and John Zebedee's tent and found a coat for himself. He suspected they would take Jesus to the home of Annas, the former high priest; so, he edged around the Olive Orchard and was there ahead of the soldiers while he hid near the entrance to the gate of the high priest's palace.

On The Way to the High Priest Palace

Before they left the garden with Jesus, a dispute broke out between the captain of the Jewish guard and the captain of the Roman soldiers about the location to take Jesus. The captain of the temple guard gave orders to take him to Caiaphas, the acting high priest. The captain of the

Roman soldiers gave orders that Jesus should be taken to the palace of Annas, the former high priest, and father-in-law of Caiaphas. And they did this because the Romans were accustomed to dealing with Annas in all things that dealt with the enforcement of the Jewish ecclesiastical laws. The orders of the Roman captain were obeyed, and they took Jesus to the home of Annas for basic examination. Judas marched alongside the captains hearing everything that was said but took no part in the dispute; neither the Jewish captain nor the Roman captain would speak to the betrayer as they held him in such contempt.

At about this time, John Zebedee recalled the Master once telling him to remain always near at hand, and he hurried up to be near Jesus as he marched along between the two captains. The commander of the temple guard saw him come up alongside and told his assistant to arrest John, that he was one of this fellow's followers. But when the Roman captain heard this, he looked up and saw John; and he gave orders that the apostle should come over to him. Then the Roman captain said to the Jewish captain: This man is neither a traitor nor a coward. I saw him in the garden, and he did not draw a sword to resist us. He has the courage to come forth to be with his Master, and no man shall lay upon him. The Urantia Book.

The Roman law allows that any prisoner may have at least one friend to stand with him before the judgment bar and this man will not be prevented from standing by the side of his Master, the prisoner. The Jews were afraid to say anything to John or to harm him in any way because he had some status of a Roman counselor selected to act as an observer of the transactions of the Jewish ecclesiastical court. (This explains why John Zebedee was allowed to be with Jesus throughout this hold ordeal.) When Judas heard this, he was so humiliated and ashamed; he dropped back behind the group arriving at the palace of Annas. John's situation made even more secure when, turning Jesus over to the captain of the temple guards at the gate of Anna's palace, the Roman captain told his assistant to go along with this prisoner and see that the Jews do not kill him without Pilate's consent. And he told his assistant to see that the Galilean was permitted to stand by and observe everything taking place. So, John was able to be near Jesus right up to his death on the cross, while the other ten apostles remained in hiding.

All the way to the palace of Annas, Jesus didn't say a word. From the time of his arrest to the time of his appearance before Annas, Jesus said nothing.

Examination by Annas

Men appointed by Annas had secretly instructed the captain of the Roman soldiers to take Jesus right away to the palace of Annas after his arrest. The former high priest wanted to keep up his prestige as the chief ecclesiastical authority of the Jews. The other reason Annas wanted to keep Jesus at his house for several hours was to allow time to legally call the court of the Sanhedrin in session as it was not lawful to convene the Sanhedrin court before the time of the offering of the morning sacrifice in the temple. And the sacrifice was offered around three o'clock in the morning.

Annas knew that a court was waiting at the palace of his son-in-law, Caiaphas. There were thirty members of the Sanhedrin court gathered at the home of the high priest, so they would be ready to sit in judgment of Jesus when he was brought before them.

Annas, made rich by the temple revenues, his son-in-law, the acting high priest, and his relationship with the Roman authority, was the most powerful, single person in all Jewry.

[184:1.2] *Annas had not seen Jesus for several years, not since the time when the Master called at his house and immediately left upon observing his coldness and reserve in receiving him. Annas had thought to presume on this early acquaintance and thereby attempt to persuade Jesus to abandon his claims and leave Palestine. He was reluctant to participate in the murder of a good man and had reasoned that Jesus might choose to leave the country rather than to suffer death. But when Annas stood before the stalwart and determined Galilean, he knew at once that it would be useless to make such proposals. Jesus was even more majestic and well poised than Annas remembered him.*

[184:1.3] *When Jesus was young, Annas had taken a great interest in him, but now his revenues were threatened by what Jesus had so recently done in driving the money-changers and other commercial traders out of the temple. This act had aroused the enmity of the former high priest far more than had Jesus' teachings.*

[184:1.4] *Annas entered his spacious audience chamber, seated himself in a large chair, and commanded that Jesus be brought before him. After a few moments spent in silently surveying the Master, he said: "You realize that something must be done about your teaching since you are disturbing the peace and order of our country." As Annas looked inquiringly at Jesus, the Master looked full into his eyes but made no reply. Again Annas spoke, "What are the names of your disciples, besides Simon Zelotes, the agitator?" Again Jesus looked down upon him, but he did not answer.*

[184:1.5] *Annas was considerably disturbed by Jesus' refusal to answer his questions, so much so that he said to him: "Do you have no care as to whether I am friendly to you or not? Do you have no regard for the power I have in determining the issues of your coming trial?" When Jesus heard this, he said: "Annas, you know that you could have no power over me unless it were permitted by my Father. Some would destroy the Son of Man because they are ignorant; they know no better, but you, friend, know what you are doing. How can you, therefore, reject the light of God?"*

[184:1.6] *The kindly manner in which Jesus spoke to Annas almost bewildered him. But he had already determined in his mind that Jesus must either leave Palestine or die; so he summoned up his courage and asked: "Just what is it you are trying to teach the people? What do you claim to be?" Jesus answered: "You know full well that I have spoken openly to the world. I have taught in the synagogues and many times in the temple, where all the Jews and many of the gentiles have heard me. In secret I have spoken nothing; why, then, do you ask me about my teaching? Why do you not summon those who have heard me and inquire of them? Behold, all Jerusalem has heard that which I have spoken even if you have not yourself heard these teachings." But before Annas could make reply, the chief steward of the palace, who was standing near, struck Jesus in the face with his hand, saying, "How dare you answer the high priest with such words?" Annas spoke no words of rebuke to his steward, but Jesus addressed him, saying, "My friend, if I have spoken evil, bear witness against the evil; but if I have spoken the truth, why, then, should you smite me?"*

[184:1.7] *Although Annas regretted that his steward had struck Jesus, he was too proud to take notice of the matter. In his confusion he went into another room, leaving Jesus alone with the household attendants and the temple guards for almost an hour.*

[184:1.8] *When he returned, going up to the Master's side, he said, "Do you claim to be the Messiah, the deliverer of Israel?" Said Jesus: "Annas, you have known me from the times of my youth. You know that I claim to be nothing except that which my Father has appointed and that*

I have been sent to all men, gentile as well as Jew.” Then said Annas: “I have been told that you have claimed to be the Messiah; is that true?” Jesus looked upon Annas but only replied, “So you have said.”

[184:1.9] About this time messengers arrived from the palace of Caiaphas to inquire what time Jesus would be brought before the court of the Sanhedrin, and since it was nearing the break of day, Annas thought best to send Jesus bound and in the custody of the temple guards to Caiaphas. He himself followed after them shortly. ²⁵

I wonder what our lives in the Western World would be like today if Jesus had decided to leave Palestine. But Jesus was determined to do God's will by dying and to prove to us that life is a continuum, although it will be in another dimension; Jesus told us in John 18:36, "My kingdom is not of this world." He was trying to teach that there are other worlds.

Peter In the Courtyard

As the group of soldiers and guards came to the entrance of the palace of Annas, John Zebedee was marching by the side of the captain of the Roman soldiers. Judas had dropped some distance behind and Simon Peter even further back. After John had reached the palace courtyard with Jesus and the guards, Judas came up to the gate; but after seeing John and Jesus, Judas went to the home of Caiaphas, where the real trial of Jesus was to take place.

Soon after Judas left, Simon Peter arrived. As he stood by the gate, John noticed him just as they were getting ready to take Jesus into the palace. The gatekeeper knew John, and when he spoke to her to let Peter in, she gladly obliged. The night was chilly after he entered the courtyard, Peter went over and warmed himself by the charcoal fire. Peter felt out of place among the enemies of Jesus, and he was out of place. Jesus had not told him to keep close at hand as he had told John. Peter should have been with the other apostles, who had been warned not to endanger their lives during the trial and crucifixion of Jesus. Peter had thrown away his sword a short time before reaching the palace gate. He was baffled and could not believe Jesus was arrested, and he had a difficult time grasping the reality of the situation that he was there in the courtyard of Annas, the high priest warming himself among the servants of the high priest. He wondered what the other apostles were doing.

Shortly after the gate guard admitted Peter one of the apostles, and while he was warming himself near the fire, she went to him and asked if he wasn't one of that man's disciples? Peter thought of saving himself and quickly denied that he was. Doing the next couple of hours, two more people asked him the same question, and he vehemently denied knowing Jesus. The third time he denied the accusation, the cock crowed; then Peter remembered the words of the Master earlier that night that he would deny him three times before the cock crowed. As he stood there feeling guilty, the palace doors opened, and the guard led Jesus on to Caiaphas. As Jesus passed by Peter, he saw by the light of the torches, a look of despair on the face of his former confident and brave apostle; and he turned and looked upon Peter. Peter never forgot that look as long as he lived. It was such a glance of pity and love that mortal man had ever seen on the face of Jesus.

After Jesus and the guard had left the palace gate, Peter followed them for a while, but he could not go any further. He sat down by the side of the road and what seemed to be a river of water ran from his eyes. After he had shed the tears of anguish, returned toward the camp, hoping to find his brother Andrew. When he reached the camp, he saw only David Zebedee, who sent a messenger with Peter to show him where his brother was hiding in Jerusalem.

Before The Sanhedrin Court

It was 3:30 that Friday morning when the chief priest, Caiaphas, brought the Sanhedrin court of inquiry into session and asked that Jesus is brought in for the proceedings. On three separate occasions the Sanhedrin, by a significant majority vote, had already sentenced Jesus to death. They decided he was worthy of informal charges of law-breaking, blasphemy and showing contempt for the laws of Israel.

Usually, the Jews, when trying a man on capital charges, proceeded with great caution and provided every safeguard of fairness in the selection of witnesses and the entire conduct of the trial. On this occasion though, Caiaphas was more of a prosecutor than an unbiased judge.

Jesus appeared before the court clothed in his usual garments and his hands tied behind his back. The entire court was surprised and confused by his majestic appearance. Never had they looked upon such a prisoner nor seen such composure in a man on trial for his life. I quote the remainder of this section for the benefit of the reader.

[184:3.6] The Jewish law required that at least two witnesses must agree upon any point before a charge could be laid against the prisoner. Judas could not be used as a witness against Jesus because the Jewish law specifically forbade the testimony of a traitor. More than a score of false witnesses were on hand to testify against Jesus, but their testimony was so contradictory and so evidently trumped up that the Sanhedrists themselves were very much ashamed of the performance. Jesus stood there, looking down benignly upon these perjurers, and his very countenance disconcerted the lying witnesses. Throughout all this false testimony, the Master never said a word; he made no reply to their many false accusations.

[184:3.7] The first time any two of their witnesses approached even the semblance of an agreement was when two men testified that they had heard Jesus say in the course of one of his temple discourses that he would “destroy this temple made with hands and in three days make another temple without hands.” That was not exactly what Jesus said, regardless of the fact that he pointed to his own body when he made the remark referred to.

[184:3.8] Although the high priest shouted at Jesus, “Do you not answer any of these charges?” Jesus opened not his mouth. He stood there in silence while all of these false witnesses gave their testimony. Hatred, fanaticism, and unscrupulous exaggeration so characterized the words of these perjurers that their testimony fell in its own entanglements. The very best refutation of their false accusations was the Master’s calm and majestic silence.

[184:3.9] Shortly after the beginning of the testimony of the false witnesses, Annas arrived and took his seat beside Caiaphas. Annas now arose and argued that this threat of Jesus to destroy the temple was sufficient to warrant three charges against him:

[184:3.10] 1. That he was a dangerous traducer of the people. That he taught them impossible things and otherwise deceived them.

[184:3.11] 2. *That he was a fanatical revolutionist in that he advocated laying violent hands on the sacred temple, else how could he destroy it?*

[184:3.12] 3. *That he taught magic inasmuch as he promised to build a new temple, and that without hands.*

[184:3.13] *Already had the full Sanhedrin agreed that Jesus was guilty of death-deserving transgressions of the Jewish laws, but they were now more concerned with developing charges regarding his conduct and teachings which would justify Pilate in pronouncing the death sentence upon their prisoner. They knew that they must secure the consent of the Roman governor before Jesus could legally be put to death. And Annas was minded to proceed along the line of making it appear that Jesus was a dangerous teacher to be abroad among the people.*

[184:3.14] *But Caiaphas could no longer endure the sight of the Master standing there in perfect composure and unbroken silence. He thought he knew at least one way in which the prisoner might be induced to speak. Accordingly, he rushed over to the side of Jesus and, shaking his accusing finger in the Master's face, said: "I adjure you, in the name of the living God, that you tell us whether you are the Deliverer, the Son of God." Jesus answered Caiaphas: "I am. Soon I go to the Father, and presently shall the Son of Man be clothed with power and once more reign over the hosts of heaven."*

[184:3.15] *When the high priest heard Jesus utter these words, he was exceedingly angry, and rending his outer garments, he exclaimed: "What further need have we of witnesses? Behold, now have you all heard this man's blasphemy. What do you now think should be done with this lawbreaker and blasphemer?" And they all answered in unison, "He is worthy of death; let him be crucified."*

[184:3.16] *Jesus manifested no interest in any question asked him when before Annas or the Sanhedrists except the one question relative to his bestowal mission. When asked if he were the Son of God, he instantly and unequivocally answered in the affirmative.*

[184:3.17] *Annas desired that the trial proceed further and that charges of a definite nature regarding Jesus' relation to the Roman law and Roman institutions be formulated for subsequent presentation to Pilate. The councilors were anxious to carry these matters to a speedy termination, not only because it was the preparation day for the Passover and no secular work should be done afternoon, but also because they feared Pilate might any time return to the Roman capital of Judea, Caesarea, since he was in Jerusalem only for the Passover celebration.*

[184:3 18] *But Annas did not succeed in keeping control of the court. After Jesus had so unexpectedly answered Caiaphas, the high priest stepped forward and smote him in the face with his hand. Annas was truly shocked as the other members of the court, in passing out of the room, spit in Jesus' face, and many of them mockingly slapped him with the palms of their hands. And thus in disorder and with such unheard-of confusion this first session of the Sanhedrists trial of Jesus ended at half-past four o'clock.*

[184:3.19] *Thirty prejudiced and tradition-blinded false judges, with their false witnesses, are presuming to sit in judgment on the righteous Creator of a universe. And these impassioned accusers are exasperated by the majestic silence and superb bearing of this God-man. His silence is terrible to endure; his speech is fearlessly defiant. He is unmoved by their threats and undaunted by their assaults. Man sits in judgment on God, but even then he loves them and would save them if he could. ²⁶*

The Hour of Humiliation

The Jewish law necessitates that in passing the death sentence, there should be two sessions of the court. The second was to be held on the next day and the time in between was to be spent fasting and mourning by the members of the court. These men could not wait until the next day to confirm their decision that Jesus must die. They waited only one hour. Jesus was left in the audience chamber in the care of the temple guards who, with servants of the high priest, amused themselves by doing all kinds of terrible things to Jesus. They kept striking him in the face with some rod, spitting on him and all sorts of indignity and then asked him to prophesy to them. It went on for a whole hour, mistreating this unresisting man of Galilee.

During this awful hour of suffering and mock trial before these ignorant and non-feeling guards and servants, John Zebedee waited in lonely terror in an adjoining room. When this abuse first started, Jesus indicated to John by nodding his head he should go into another room. Jesus knew that if his apostle stayed in the room to see this abusive treatment, John resentment and protests would probably result in his death.

Second Meeting of the Court

At 5:30 that morning, the court reassembled, and Jesus led into the adjoining room where John was waiting. Here, the Roman soldiers and temple guards watched over Jesus while the court began assembling the charges to be presented to Pilate.

[184:5.2] *This session of the court lasted only a half hour, and when they adjourned to go before Pilate, they had drawn up the indictment of Jesus, as being worthy of death, under three heads:*

[184:5.3] 1. *That he was a perverter of the Jewish nation; he deceived the people and incited them to rebellion.*

[184:5.4] 2. *That he taught the people to refuse to pay tribute to Caesar.*

[184:5.5] 3. *That, by claiming to be a king and the founder of a new sort of kingdom, he incited treason against the emperor.*

[184:5.6] *This entire procedure was irregular and wholly contrary to the Jewish laws. No two witnesses had agreed on any matter except those who testified regarding Jesus' statement about destroying the temple and raising it again in three days. And even concerning that point, no witnesses spoke for the defense, and neither was Jesus asked to explain his intended meaning.*

[184:5.7] *The only point the court could have consistently judged him on was that of blasphemy, and that would have rested entirely on his own testimony. Even concerning blasphemy, they failed to cast a formal ballot for the death sentence.*

[184:5.8] *And now they presumed to formulate three charges, with which to go before Pilate, on which no witnesses had been heard, and which were agreed upon while the accused prisoner was absent. When this was done, three of the Pharisees took their leave; they wanted to see Jesus destroyed, but they would not formulate charges against him without witnesses and in his absence.*

[184:5.9] *Jesus did not again appear before the Sanhedrist court. They did not want again to look upon his face as they sat in judgment upon his innocent life. Jesus did not know (as a man) of their formal charges until he heard them recited by Pilate.*

[184:5.10] *While Jesus was in the room with John and the guards, and while the court was in its second session, some of the women about the high priest's palace, together with their friends, came to look upon the strange prisoner, and one of them asked him, "Are you the Messiah, the Son of God?" And Jesus answered: "If I tell you, you will not believe me; and if I ask you, you will not answer."*²⁷

A little after six o'clock that morning, April 7, A.D. 30, according to The Urantia Book, Jesus was brought before Pilate, the Roman procurator, who governed Judea, Samaria, and Idumea that were supervised by the governing body of Syria. Jesus was taken in front of the Roman governor by the temple guards, bound, and was followed by about 50 of his accusers including the Sanhedrin court (principally Sadduceans) Judas Iscariot, the high priest, Caiaphas, and followed by the Apostle John. Annas did not appear before Pilate.

When Jesus and his accusers gathered in front of Pilate's judgment hall, the Roman governor came out and addressed the group that gathered, asked: [185:2.1] "What accusation do you bring against this fellow?" The Sadducees and counselors had taken it upon themselves to get rid of Jesus and were determined to go before Pilate and ask for the confirmation of the death sentence to be pronounced upon Jesus without stating any definite charges. The spokesman for the Sanhedrist court answered Pilate: If this man were not an evildoer, we should not have delivered him up to you.

When Pilate saw that they were a little leery of stating their charges against Jesus, he knew they had been up all night deliberating as to his guilt; he answered them. *Since you have not agreed on any definite charges, why do you not take this man and pass judgment on him in accordance with your own law? Then the clerk said of the Sanhedrin court to Pilate: It is not lawful for us to put any man to death, and this disturber of our nation is worthy to die for the things he said and done. Therefore have we come before you for confirmation of this decree?*²⁸

If their law didn't allow them to kill any man, what about stoning people to death? Here, they got the Romans to do their dirty work. I don't know about their way of thinking; but to me, that seemed to be a greater sin, because they got another soul involved in their wrongdoing, and they were still responsible for the death of Jesus, even though someone else performed the act.

Pilate knew about Jesus' work among the Jews, so he figured the charges brought against Jesus were associated with infringement of the Jewish ecclesiastical laws; so, he referred the case back to their tribunal. Pilate wanted to postpone this case, but he saw how the Jewish leaders had their minds made up to go on with the matter. He knew that this day was the morning of the Passover and it was Friday, the preparation for the Jewish Sabbath.

The Private Examination by Pilate

[185:3.1] *Pilate took Jesus and John Zebedee into a private chamber, leaving the guards outside in the hall, and requesting the prisoner to sit down, he sat down by his side and asked several questions. Pilate began his talk with Jesus by assuring him that he did not believe the first count against him: that he was a perverter of the nation and an inciter to rebellion. Then he asked, "Did you ever teach that tribute should be refused, Caesar?" Jesus, pointing to John, said, "Ask him or any other man who has heard my teaching." Then Pilate questioned John about this matter of tribute, and John testified concerning his Master's teaching and explained that Jesus and his apostles paid taxes both to Caesar and to the temple. When Pilate had questioned John, he said, "See that you tell no man that I talked with you." And John never did reveal this matter.*

[185:3.2] Pilate then turned around to question Jesus further, saying: “And now about the third accusation against you, are you the king of the Jews?” Since there was a tone of possibly sincere inquiry in Pilate’s voice, Jesus smiled on the procurator and said: “Pilate, do you ask this for yourself, or do you take this question from these others, my accusers?” Whereupon, in a tone of partial indignation, the governor answered: “Am I a Jew? Your own people and the chief priests delivered you up and asked me to sentence you to death. I question the validity of their charges and am only trying to find out for myself what you have done. Tell me, have you said that you are the king of the Jews, and have you sought to found a new kingdom?”

[185:3.3] Then said Jesus to Pilate: “Do you not perceive that my kingdom is not of this world? If my kingdom were of this world, surely would my disciples fight that I should not be delivered into the hands of the Jews? My presence here before you in these bonds is sufficient to show all men that my kingdom is a spiritual dominion, even the brotherhood of men who, through faith and by love, have become the sons of God. And this salvation is for the gentile as well as for the Jew.”

[185:3.4] “Then you are a king after all?” said Pilate. And Jesus answered: “Yes, I am such a king, and my kingdom is the family of the faithful sons of my Father who is in heaven. For this purpose was I born into this world, even that I should show my Father to all men and bear witness to the truth of God? And even now do I declare to you that everyone who loves the truth hears my voice.”

[185:3.5] Then said Pilate, half in ridicule and half in sincerity, “Truth, what is truth — who knows?”

[185:3.6] Pilate was not able to fathom Jesus’ words, nor was he able to understand the nature of his spiritual kingdom, but he was now certain that the prisoner had done nothing worthy of death. One look at Jesus, face to face, was enough to convince even Pilate that this gentle and weary, but majestic and upright, man was no wild and dangerous revolutionary who aspired to establish himself on the temporal throne of Israel. Pilate thought he understood something of what Jesus meant when he called himself a king, for he was familiar with the teachings of the Stoics, who declared that “the wise man is king.” Pilate was thoroughly convinced that, instead of being a dangerous seditionmonger, Jesus was nothing more or less than a harmless visionary, an innocent fanatic.

[185:3.7] After questioning the Master, Pilate went back to the chief priests and the accusers of Jesus and said: “I have examined this man, and I find no fault in him. I do not think he is guilty of the charges you have made against him; I think he ought to be set free.” And when the Jews heard this, they were moved with great anger, so much so that they wildly shouted that Jesus should die; and one of the Sanhedrists boldly stepped up by the side of Pilate, saying: “This man stirs up the people, beginning in Galilee and continuing throughout all Judea. He is a mischief-maker and an evildoer. You will long regret it if you let this wicked man go free.”

[185:3.8] Pilate was hard pressed to know what to do with Jesus; therefore, when he heard them say that he began his work in Galilee, he thought to avoid the responsibility of deciding the case, at least to gain time for thought, by sending Jesus to appear before Herod, who was then in the city attending the Passover. Pilate also thought that this gesture would help to antidote some of the bitter feeling which had existed for some time between himself and Herod, due to numerous misunderstandings over matters of jurisdiction.

[185:3.9] Pilate, calling the guards, said: “This man is a Galilean. Take him forthwith to Herod, and when he has examined him, report his findings to me.” And they took Jesus to Herod. ²⁹

Jesus before Herod

When Herod Antipas stopped in Jerusalem, he stayed in the Maccabean palace of Herod the Great. It was here that Jesus taken by the temple guards, and he was followed by his accusers and an increasing number of people. Herod heard about Jesus for some time now and was curious about him. When Jesus stood before the wicked Idumean, on this Friday morning not for one moment did he recall Jesus as the lad many years before who had appeared before him in Sepphoris pleading for a just decision regarding money due to his father, who had been accidentally killed while at work on one of the public buildings. As far as Herod was concerned, he had never seen Jesus before. Herod had heard much about Jesus' miracles, and he hoped he could see him perform some act of wonder.

When they brought Jesus before this subordinate ruler, he was startled by his stately appearance and the calm composure. For 15 minutes, he asked Jesus questions, but the Master would not answer him. Herod ridiculed him and dared him to perform a miracle, but, Jesus would not reply to his many inquiries or respond to his heckling.

After interviewing Jesus, Herod listened to the chief priest and Sadducees accusations; he heard all and more than Pilate had heard regarding the evil doings of Jesus. Finally, after being convinced Jesus would not talk or perform a miracle, Herod, after making fun of Jesus for a while, dressed him in an old purple robe and sent him back to Pilate. Herod knew he had no jurisdiction over Jesus in Judea. Though he believed he would finally be rid of Jesus of Galilee, he was thankful it was Pilate who had the responsibility of putting him to death. Herod had never fully recovered from the fear that cursed him as the result of putting John the Baptist to death.

These decisive moments in the trial of Jesus are so important; I feel it necessary to quote so that the reader will get the full impact.

[185:5.1] *When the guards had brought Jesus back to Pilate, he went out on the front steps of the praetorium, where his judgment seat had been placed, and calling together the chief priests and Sanhedrists, said to them: "You brought this man before me with charges that he perverts the people, forbids the payment of taxes, and claims to be king of the Jews. I have examined him and fail to find him guilty of these charges. In fact, I find no fault in him. Then I sent him to Herod, and the tetrarch must have reached the same conclusion since he has sent him back to us. Certainly, nothing worthy of death has been done by this man. If you still think he needs to be disciplined, I am willing to chastise him before I release him."*

[185:5.2] *Just as the Jews were about to engage in shouting their protests against the release of Jesus, a vast crowd came marching up to the praetorium for the purpose of asking Pilate for the release of a prisoner in honor of the Passover feast. For some time it had been the custom of the Roman governors to allow the populace to choose some imprisoned or condemned man for pardon at the time of the Passover. And now that this crowd had come before him to ask for the release of a prisoner, and since Jesus had so recently been in great favor with the multitudes, it occurred to Pilate that he might possibly extricate himself from his predicament by proposing to this group that, since Jesus was now a prisoner before his judgment seat, he release to them this man of Galilee as the token of Passover good will.*

[185:5.3] *As the crowd surged up on the steps of the building, Pilate heard them calling out the name of one Barabbas. Barabbas was a noted political agitator and murderous robber, the son of a priest, who had recently been apprehended in the act of robbery and murder on the Jericho road. This man was under sentence to die as soon as the Passover festivities were over.*

[185:5.4] Pilate stood up and explained to the crowd that Jesus had been brought to him by the chief priests, who sought to have him put to death on certain charges, and that he did not think the man was worthy of death. Said Pilate: "Which, therefore, would you prefer that I release to you, this Barabbas, the murderer, or this Jesus of Galilee?" And when Pilate had thus spoken, the chief priests and the Sanhedrin councilors all shouted at the top of their voices, "Barabbas, Barabbas!" And when the people saw that the chief priests were minded to have Jesus put to death, they quickly joined in the clamor for his life while they loudly shouted for the release of Barabbas.

[185:5.5] A few days before this the multitude had stood in awe of Jesus, but the mob did not look up to one who, having claimed to be the Son of God, now found himself in the custody of the chief priests and the rulers and on trial before Pilate for his life. Jesus could be a hero in the eyes of the populace when he was driving the money-changers and the traders out of the temple, but not when he was a nonresisting prisoner in the hands of his enemies and on trial for his life.

[185:5.6] Pilate was angered at the sight of the chief priests clamoring for the pardon of a notorious murderer while they shouted for the blood of Jesus. He saw their malice and hatred and perceived their prejudice and envy. Therefore he said to them: "How could you choose the life of a murderer in preference to this man's whose worst crime is that he figuratively calls himself the king of the Jews?" But this was not a wise statement for Pilate to make. The Jews were a proud people, now subject to the Roman political yoke but hoping for the coming of a Messiah who would deliver them from gentile bondage with a great show of power and glory. They resented, more than Pilate could know, the intimation that this meek mannered teacher of strange doctrines, now under arrest and charged with crimes worthy of death, should be referred to as "the king of the Jews." They looked upon such a remark as an insult to everything which they held sacred and honorable in their national existence, and therefore did they all let loose their mighty shouts for Barabbas's release and Jesus' death.

[185:5.7] Pilate knew Jesus was innocent of the charges brought against him and had he been a just and courageous judge; he would have acquitted him and turned him loose. But he was afraid to defy these angry Jews, and while he hesitated to do his duty, a messenger came up and presented him with a sealed message from his wife, Claudia.

[185:5.8] Pilate indicated to those assembled before him that he wished to read the communication which he had just received before he proceeded further with the matter before him. When Pilate opened this letter from his wife, he read: "I pray you have nothing to do with this innocent and just man whom they call Jesus. I have suffered many things in a dream this night because of him." This note from Claudia not only greatly upset Pilate and thereby delayed the adjudication of this matter, but it unfortunately also provided considerable time in which the Jewish rulers freely circulated among the crowd and urged the people to call for the release of Barabbas and to clamor for the crucifixion of Jesus.

[185:5.9] Finally, Pilate addressed himself once more to the solution of the problem which confronted him, by asking the mixed assembly of Jewish rulers and the pardon-seeking crowd, "What shall I do with him who is called the king of the Jews?" And they all shouted with one accord, "Crucify him! Crucify him!" The unanimity of this demand from the mixed multitude startled and alarmed Pilate, the unjust and fear-ridden judge.

[185:5.10] Then once more Pilate said: "Why would you crucify this man? What evil has he done? Who will come forward to testify against him?" But when they heard Pilate speak in defense of Jesus, they only cried out all the more, "Crucify him! Crucify him!"

[185:5.11] *Then again Pilate appealed to them regarding the release of the Passover prisoner, saying: "Once more I ask you, which of these prisoners I shall release to you at this, your Passover time?" And again the crowd shouted, "Give us Barabbas!"*

[185:5.12] *Then said Pilate: "If I release the murderer, Barabbas, what shall I do with Jesus?" And once more the multitude shouted in unison, "Crucify him! Crucify him!"*

[185:5.13.] *Pilate was terrorized by the insistent clamor of the mob, acting under the direct leadership of the chief priests and the councilors of the Sanhedrin; nevertheless, he decided upon at least one more attempt to appease the crowd and save Jesus.* ³⁰

Pilate's Last Appeal

[185:6.1] *In all that is transpiring early this Friday morning before Pilate, only the enemies of Jesus are participating. His many friends either do not yet know of his night arrest and early morning trial or are in hiding lest they also be apprehended and adjudged worthy of death because they believe Jesus' teachings. In the multitude which now clamors for the Master's death are to be found only his sworn enemies and the easily led and unthinking populace.*

[185:6.2] *Pilate would make one last appeal to their pity. Being afraid to defy the clamor of this misled mob who cried for the blood of Jesus, he ordered the Jewish guards and the Roman soldiers to take Jesus and scourge him. This was in itself an unjust and illegal procedure since the Roman law provided that only those condemned to die by crucifixion should be thus subjected to scourging. The guards took Jesus into the open courtyard of the praetorium for this ordeal. Though his enemies did not witness this scourging, Pilate did, and before they had finished this wicked abuse, he directed the scourgers to desist and indicated that Jesus should be brought to him. Before the scourgers laid their knotted whips upon Jesus as he was bound to the whipping post, they again put upon him the purple robe, and plaiting a crown of thorns, they placed it upon his brow. And when they had put a reed in his hand as a mock scepter, they knelt before him and mocked him, saying, "Hail, king of the Jews!" And they spit upon him and struck him in the face with their hands. And one of them, before they returned him to Pilate, took the reed from his hand and struck him upon the head.*

[185:6.3] *Then Pilate led forth this bleeding and lacerated prisoner and, presenting him before the mixed multitude, said: "Behold the man! Again I declare to you that I find no crime in him, and having scourged him, I would release him."*

[185:6.4] *There stood Jesus of Nazareth, clothed in an old purple royal robe with a crown of thorns piercing his kindly brow. His face was bloodstained, and his form bowed down with suffering and grief. But nothing can appeal to the unfeeling hearts of those who are victims of intense emotional hatred and slaves to religious prejudice. This sight sent a mighty shudder through the realms of a vast universe, but it did not touch the hearts of those who had set their minds to effect the destruction of Jesus.*

[185:6.5] *When they had recovered from the first shock of seeing the Master's plight, they only shouted the louder and the longer, "Crucify him! Crucify him! Crucify him!"*

[185:6.6] *And now did Pilate comprehend that it was futile to appeal to their supposed feelings of pity. He stepped forward and said: "I perceive that you are determined this man shall die, but what has he done to deserve death? Who will declare his crime?"*

[185:6.7] *Then the high priest himself stepped forward and, going up to Pilate, angrily declared: "We have a sacred law, and by that law, this man ought to die because he made himself out to be the Son of God." When Pilate heard this, he was all the more afraid, not only of the Jews but recalling his wife's note and the Greek mythology of the gods coming down on earth, he now trembled at the thought of Jesus possibly being a divine personage. He waved to the crowd to hold its peace while he took Jesus by the arm and again led him inside the building that he might further examine him. Pilate was now confused by fear, bewildered by superstition, and harassed by the stubborn attitude of the mob.* ³¹

Pilate's Last Interview

[185:7.1] *As Pilate, trembling with fearful emotion, sat down by the side of Jesus, he inquired: "Where do you come from? Really, who are you? What is this they say, that you are the Son of God?"*

[185:7.2] *But Jesus could hardly answer such questions when asked by a man-fearing, weak, and vacillating judge who was so unjust as to subject him to flogging even when he had declared him innocent of all crime, and before he had been duly sentenced to die. Jesus looked Pilate straight in the face, but he did not answer him. Then said Pilate: "Do you refuse to speak to me? Do you not realize that I still have power to release you or to crucify you?" Then said Jesus: "You could have no power over me except it was permitted from above. You could exercise no authority over the Son of Man unless the Father in heaven allowed it. But you are not so guilty since you are ignorant of the gospel. He who betrayed me and he who delivered me to you, they have the greater sin."*

[185:7.3] *This last talk with Jesus thoroughly frightened Pilate. This moral coward and judicial weakling now labored under the double weight of the superstitious fear of Jesus and mortal dread of the Jewish leaders.*

[185:7.4] *Again Pilate appeared before the crowd, saying: "I am certain this man is only a religious offender. You should take him and judge him by your law. Why should you expect that I would consent to his death because he has clashed with your traditions?"*

[185:7.5] *Pilate was just about ready to release Jesus when Caiaphas, the high priest, approached the cowardly Roman judge and, shaking an avenging finger in Pilate's face, said with angry words which the entire multitude could hear: "If you release this man, you are not Caesar's friend, and I will see that the emperor knows all." This public threat was too much for Pilate. Fear for his personal fortunes now eclipsed all other considerations, and the cowardly governor ordered Jesus brought out before the judgment seat. As the Master stood there before them, he pointed to him and tauntingly said, "Behold your king." And the Jews answered, "Away with him. Crucify him!" And then Pilate said, with much irony and sarcasm, "Shall I crucify your king?" And the Jews answered, "Yes, crucify him! We have no king but Caesar." And then did Pilate realize that there was no hope of saving Jesus since he was unwilling to defy the Jews.* ³²

Pilate Tragic Surrender

[185:8.1] *Here stood the Son of God incarnate as the Son of Man. He was arrested without indictment; accused without evidence; adjudged without witnesses; punished without a verdict; and now was soon to be condemned to die by an unjust judge who confessed that he could find no fault in him. If Pilate had thought to appeal to their patriotism by referring to Jesus as the "king of the Jews," he utterly failed. The Jews were not expecting any such a king. The declaration of the chief priests and the Sadducees, "We have no king but Caesar," was a shock even to the unthinking populace, but it was too late now to save Jesus even had the mob dared to espouse the Master's cause.*

[185:8.2] *Pilate was afraid of a tumult or a riot. He dared not risk having such a disturbance during Passover time in Jerusalem. He had recently received a reprimand from Caesar, and he would not risk another. The mob cheered when he ordered the release of Barabbas. Then he ordered a basin and some water, and there before the multitude he washed his hands, saying: "I am innocent of the blood of this man. You are determined that he shall die, but I have found no guilt in him. See you to it. The soldiers will lead him forth." And then the mob cheered and replied, "His blood be on us and on our children."*³³

Just Before the Crucifixion

Just before Jesus was crucified, the Master turned to the apostle John and said:[186:0.1] "John you can do no more for me. Go to my mother and bring her to me ere I die." When John heard his Master's request, he was reluctant to leave Jesus alone with his enemies, but he hurried off to Bethany where the entire family was assembled, waiting at the home of Martha and Mary, the sisters of Lazarus, whom Jesus raised from the dead.

Several times during the morning of Jesus' trial, the messenger of David Zebedee brought news of the progress of Jesus' trial. The family of Jesus didn't reach Bethany until just a few minutes before the arrival of John hearing the request of Jesus to see his mother before he was put to death. After John Zebedee told them all that had happened since the arrest of Jesus at midnight, Mary, his mother, went at once with John to see her oldest son. By the time Mary and John reached the city, Jesus, along with the Roman soldiers, had already reached Golgotha.

When Mary, mother of Jesus, started out to see her son, his sister Ruth refused to remain behind with the rest of the family. She was determined to go with her mother, and her brother Jude went with her. The rest of Jesus' family remained in Bethany under the direction of James, one of Jesus' apostle; and almost every hour, a messenger of David Zebedee brought reports on the progress of the terrible happening of putting their oldest brother, Jesus of Nazareth to death.

The End of Judas Iscariot

[186:1.1] *It was about half past eight o'clock this Friday morning when the hearing of Jesus before Pilate was ended and the Master was placed in the custody of the Roman soldiers who were to crucify him. As soon as the Romans took possession of Jesus, the captain of the Jewish guards marched with his men back to their temple headquarters. The chief priest and his Sanhedrist associates followed close behind the guards, going directly to their usual meeting place in the hall of hewn stone in the temple. Here they found many other members of the Sanhedrin waiting to learn what had been done with Jesus. As Caiaphas was engaged in making his report to the Sanhedrin regarding the trial and condemnation of Jesus, Judas appeared before them to claim his reward for the part he had played in his Master's arrest and sentence of death.*

[186:1.2] *All of these Jews loathed Judas; they looked upon the betrayer with only feelings of utter contempt. Throughout the trial of Jesus before Caiaphas and during his appearance before Pilate, Judas was pricked in his conscience about his traitorous conduct. And he was also beginning to become somewhat disillusioned regarding the reward he was to receive as payment for his services as Jesus' betrayer. He did not like the coolness and aloofness of the Jewish authorities; nevertheless, he expected to be liberally rewarded for his cowardly conduct. He anticipated being called before the full meeting of the Sanhedrin and there hearing himself eulogized while they conferred upon him suitable honors in token of the great service which he flattered himself he had rendered his nation. Imagine, therefore, the great surprise of this egotistic traitor when a*

servant of the high priest, tapping him on the shoulder, called him just outside the hall and said: “Judas, I have been appointed to pay you for the betrayal of Jesus. Here is your reward.” And thus speaking, the servant of Caiaphas handed Judas a bag containing thirty pieces of silver — the current price of a good, healthy slave.

[186:1.3] Judas was stunned, dumfounded. He rushed back to enter the hall but was debarred by the doorkeeper. He wanted to appeal to the Sanhedrin, but they would not admit him. Judas could not believe that these rulers of the Jews would allow him to betray his friends and his Master and then offer him as a reward thirty pieces of silver. He was humiliated, disillusioned, and utterly crushed. He walked away from the temple, as it were, in a trance. He automatically dropped the money bag in his deep pocket, that same pocket wherein he had so long carried the bag containing the apostolic funds. And he wandered out through the city after the crowds who were on their way to witness the crucifixions.

[186:1.4] From a distance Judas saw them raise the cross piece with Jesus nailed thereon, and upon sight of this he rushed back to the temple and, forcing his way past the doorkeeper, found himself standing in the presence of the Sanhedrin, which was still in session. The betrayer was well-nigh breathless and highly distraught, but he managed to stammer out these words: “I have sinned in that I have betrayed innocent blood. You have insulted me. You have offered me as a reward for my service, money — the price of a slave. I repent that I have done this; here is your money. I want to escape the guilt of this deed.”

[186:1.5] When the rulers of the Jews heard Judas, they scoffed at him. One of them sitting near where Judas stood, motioned that he should leave the hall and said: “Your Master has already been put to death by the Romans, and as for your guilt, what is that to us? See you to that — and begone!”

[186:1.6] As Judas left the Sanhedrin chamber, he removed the thirty pieces of silver from the bag and threw them broadcast over the temple floor. When the betrayer left the temple, he was almost beside himself. Judas was now passing through the experience of the realization of the true nature of sin. All the glamor, fascination, and intoxication of wrongdoing had vanished. Now the evildoer stood alone and face to face with the judgment verdict of his disillusioned and disappointed soul. Sin was bewitching and adventurous in the committing, but now must the harvest of the naked and unromantic facts be faced.

[186:1.7] This onetime ambassador of the kingdom of heaven on earth now walked through the streets of Jerusalem, forsaken and alone. He was desperate and his despair was absolute. On his journey through the city and outside the walls, on down into the terrible solitude of the valley of Hinnom, where he climbed up the steep rocks and, taking the girdle of his cloak, fastened one end to a small tree, tied the other about his neck, and cast himself over the precipice. Before he was dead, the knot which his nervous hands had tied gave way, and the betrayer’s body was dashed to pieces as it fell on the jagged rocks below.³⁴

[186:1.7] means Paper 186, section 1, paragraph 7.

Chapter 13

The Burial of Jesus

Before bringing this book to its conclusion, I want to bring out one of the primary purposes of Jesus' mission on our planet that the so-called religions of authority, as Jesus so accurately called them (human authority), overlooked for so many years. Jesus stayed on the cross for about an hour after his death. They would have taken him down sooner, but they were waiting for the military unit to be dispatched.

The rulers of the Jews planned on throwing Jesus' body into the open burial pits of Gehenna, in the south part of the city, as was the custom to dispose of bodies of victims of crucifixion. If those Jewish leaders had their way, Jesus body would have been exposed to the wild animals.

Joseph, of Arimathea along with Nicodemus, had gone to plead with Pilate for the body of Jesus to be turned over to them for the proper burial. Often, friends of a person crucified would offer bribes to the Roman authorities to obtain possession of the body of their interest. Joseph went to Pilate with a large sum of money, in case he needed it to pay for permission to remove Jesus' body to a private burial tomb. Pilate would not take any money for this. When he learned of Joseph and Nicodemus's request, he quickly signed the order, which authorized Joseph to go to Golgotha and immediately take full possession of the master's body. In the meantime, a group of Jews representing the Sanhedrin had gone out to Golgotha to make sure that Jesus' body was with the soldiers when they went to the public burial pits.

When Joseph and Nicodemus reached Golgotha with their order, they found the soldiers were taking Jesus' body down from the cross, and those who represented the Sanhedrin (the highest judicial and ecclesiastical council of the ancient Jewish nation) stood by to make certain his body was taken to the criminal burial pit. When Joseph presented Pilate's order for the Master's body to the centurion, the Jews raised hell. As they raved, they sought violently to take possession of the body, and when they did this, the centurion ordered four of his soldiers to his side and drawn swords, they stood astride the Master's body as it lay there on the ground. The centurion ordered the other soldiers to leave the bodies of the two thieves while they drove back this angry mob of infuriated Jews. After order was restored, the centurion read the request from Pilate to the Jews, and he stepped aside saying to Joseph, This body is yours to do with it as you see fit. I and my soldiers will stand by to see that no man interferes, The Urantia Book.

Crucified bodies were not buried in Jewish cemeteries there was a strict law against it. Joseph and Nicodemus knew this law, so they decided to bury Jesus in Joseph's new family tomb hewn out of solid rock. It was located a short distance north of where Jesus was crucified, and across the road leading to Samaria. No one had ever laid in this tomb, and they thought it appropriate that the Master should rest there. Joseph sincerely believed that Jesus would rise from the dead, but Nicodemus was skeptical. Joseph and Nicodemus were formal members of the

Sanhedrin; they kept their faith in Jesus a secret from their fellow Sanhedrists for a long time however some members suspected them even before they withdrew from the council. From that time on they were the most outspoken disciples in all Jerusalem.

Around 4:30 that Friday afternoon, the burial procession for Jesus of Nazareth started from Golgotha to Joseph's tomb across the way. The body was wrapped in a linen sheet as four men carried it, followed by those faithful women of Jesus' group from Galilee. The men that carried the body of Jesus to the tomb were Joseph, Nicodemus, John, and the Roman centurion.

They carried the body into the tomb, a chamber about ten feet squared, where they rushed to prepare it for burial. The Jews did not bury their dead; they embalmed them. Joseph and Nicodemus had brought with them a significant amount of myrrh and aloes, and they wrapped the body with bandages and saturated it with a solution they had brought with them. When the embalming was completed, they tied napkins around his face, wrapped his body in a linen sheet and reverently placed it on a shelf in the tomb. After the body was prepared and placed, the centurion instructed his soldiers to put the door-stone before the entrance of the grave. The soldiers then took the bodies of the thieves to Gehenna, while the others went off to Jerusalem in sorrow to observe the Passover according to the laws of Moses.

The men who prepared Jesus for burial were in a considerable hurry because this was the preparation day, and the Sabbath was drawing near. The men hurried back to the city, while the women lingered by the tomb until it was very dark.

While all the above was happening, the women were hiding nearby, so they saw all that took place, and they saw where they laid the Master's body. They disappeared because it was not permissible for women to be with men at this time according to the Jewish law. The women who lingered behind did not think Jesus body was adequately prepared for the burial rest. They decided that they would go back to the home of Joseph, rest over the Sabbath, then prepare spices and ointment and return on Sunday morning and properly prepare the Master's body for the dead rest. The women who stayed at the tomb Friday evening were Mary Magdalene, the wife of Clopas, Martha another sister of Jesus' mother, and Rebecca of Sepphoris, the woman who wanted to marry Jesus when he was around nineteen.

Other than David Zebedee and Joseph of Arimathea, very few of Jesus' disciples believed or understood that Jesus was due to rise from the tomb on the third day. If Jesus followers were not mindful that Jesus had promised to rise from the grave on the third day, his enemies were. The chief priest, Pharisees and Sadducees remembered; they had received the report that if his life were taken, in three days, he would rise from the dead. That Friday night around midnight, after the Passover Supper, a group of Jewish leaders gathered at the home of Caiaphas, where they talked about their fear of Jesus claiming that on the third day after his death, he would rise from the dead. The meeting ended when an agreement was reached that a group of Sanhedrin would visit Pilate early the next day with the official request of the Sanhedrin that Roman guards be placed at Jesus' tomb to prevent his friends from tampering with it. The Sanhedrin spokesman of this committee said to Pilate: [188:2.2] *Sir we remember that this deceiver, Jesus of Nazareth, said while he was yet alive, after three days I will raise again. Therefore, we come to you with the request that you issue guards that would make sure his sepulcher is secured against his followers, at least until after the third day. We fear that his disciples will come and steal him during the night, and then claim to the people that he has risen from the dead. If this was allowed to happen, this mistake would be far worse than allowing him to live.'*

When Pilate heard the request of the Sanhedrists, he said: I will give a guard of ten soldiers, go your way, and make the tomb secure. The Sanhedrists went back to their temple secured ten of their guards, and then marched out to Joseph's tomb with ten of their guards and ten of the Roman soldiers on the Sabbath morning to watch over Jesus' tomb. These men rolled another stone in front of the grave and set the seal of Palate on and around these stones, in case they were disturbed without their knowledge. And these 20 remained on watch up to the hour of the resurrection, while the Jews carried them their food and drinks.

Throughout the Sabbath day, the disciples and apostles were hiding while the whole of Jerusalem discussed the death of Jesus on the cross. There were about one, and a half million Jews present in Jerusalem at that time, coming from all parts of the Roman Empire and Mesopotamia. It was the start of the Passover week, and all these pilgrims were in the city and learned of the resurrection of Jesus. They would carry the news back home with them.

Late that Saturday night, John Mark called a meeting for the eleven apostles to meet secretly at his father's home; and just before midnight, they all assembled in the same upper chamber where they had their last supper with Jesus two nights before.

Mary, the mother of Jesus, along with Ruth and Jude, returned to Bethany to be with their family this Saturday evening just before sunset. David Zebedee stayed at the home of Nicodemus, and he arranged for his messengers to gather early Sunday morning. The women of Galilee remained at the home of Joseph of Arimathea. The quote from The Urantia Book describes the meaning of the death on the cross.

Meaning of the Death on The Cross

[188:4] Although Jesus did not die this death on the cross to atone for the racial guilt of mortal man nor to provide some sort of effective approach to an otherwise offended and unforgiving God; even though the Son of Man did not offer himself as a sacrifice to appease the wrath of God and to open the way for sinful man to obtain salvation; notwithstanding that these ideas of atonement and propitiation are erroneous, nonetheless, there are significances attached to this death of Jesus on the cross which should not be overlooked. It is a fact that Urantia has become known among other neighboring inhabited planets as the "World of the Cross."

Jesus desired to live a full mortal life in the flesh on Urantia. Death is, ordinarily, a part of life. Death is the last act in the mortal drama. In your well-meant efforts to escape the superstitious errors of the false interpretation of the meaning of the death on the cross, you should be careful not to make the great mistake of failing to perceive the true significance and the genuine import of the Master's death.

Mortal man was never the property of the archdeceivers. Jesus did not die to ransom man from the clutch of the apostate rulers and fallen princes of the spheres. The Father in heaven never conceived of such crass injustice as damning a mortal soul because of the evil-doing of his ancestors. Neither was the Master's death on the cross a sacrifice which consisted in an effort to pay God a debt which the race of mankind had come to owe him.

Before Jesus lived on earth, you might possibly have been justified in believing in such a God, but not since the Master lived and died among your fellow mortals. Moses taught the dignity and justice of a Creator God; but Jesus portrayed the love and mercy of a heavenly Father.

The animal nature — the tendency toward evil-doing — may be hereditary, but sin is not transmitted from parent to child. Sin is the act of conscious and deliberate rebellion against the Father's will and the Sons' laws by an individual will creature.

Jesus lived and died for a whole universe, not just for the races of this one world. While the mortals of the realms had salvation even before Jesus lived and died on Urantia, it is nevertheless a fact that his bestowal on this world greatly illuminated the way of salvation; his death did much to make forever plain the certainty of mortal survival after death in the flesh.

Though it is hardly proper to speak of Jesus as a sacrificer, a ransomer, or a redeemer, it is wholly correct to refer to him as a savior. He forever made the way of salvation (survival) more clear and certain; he did better and more surely showed the way of salvation for all the mortals of all the worlds of the universe of Nebadon.

When once you grasp the idea of God as a true and loving Father, the only concept which Jesus ever taught, you must forthwith, in all consistency, utterly abandon all those primitive notions about God as an offended monarch, a stern and all-powerful ruler whose chief delight is to detect his subjects in wrongdoing and to see that they are adequately punished, unless some being almost equal to himself should volunteer to suffer for them, to die as a substitute and in their stead. The whole idea of ransom and atonement is incompatible with the concept of God as it was taught and exemplified by Jesus of Nazareth. The infinite love of God is not secondary to anything in the divine nature.

All this concept of atonement and sacrificial salvation is rooted and grounded in selfishness. Jesus taught that service to one's fellows is the highest concept of the brotherhood of spirit believers. Salvation should be taken for granted by those who believe in the fatherhood of God. The believer's chief concern should not be the selfish desire for personal salvation but rather the unselfish urge to love and, therefore, serve one's fellows even as Jesus loved and served mortal men.

Neither do genuine believers trouble themselves so much about the future punishment of sin. The real believer is only concerned about present separation from God. True, wise fathers may chasten their sons, but they do all this in love and for corrective purposes. They do not punish in anger, neither do they chastise in retribution.

Even if God were the stern and legal monarch of a universe in which justice ruled supreme, he certainly would not be satisfied with the childish scheme of substituting an innocent sufferer for a guilty offender.

The great thing about the death of Jesus, as it is related to the enrichment of human experience and the enlargement of the way of salvation, is not the fact of his death, but rather the superb manner and the matchless spirit in which he met death.

This entire idea of the ransom of the atonement places salvation upon a plane of unreality; such a concept is purely philosophic. Human salvation is real; it is based on two realities which may be grasped by the creature's faith and thereby become incorporated into individual human experience: the fact of the fatherhood of God and its correlated truth, the brotherhood of man. It is true, after all, that you are to be "forgiven your debts, even as you forgive your debtors."²

Jesus died to prove to mortal man that we will continue to live if we follow in His footsteps. Those that don't live by the law of life will go to the second death mentioned in Revelation 2:11 "He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches: "He that overcometh shall not be hurt of the second death."

The Morontia Transit

Morontia is the stuff the lower parts of the spiritual dimension are made of including the soul—according to those Higher Beings. We mortals must realize that as Jesus' body lay in Joseph's tomb, there was a great deal of activity going on in this Morontia dimension that we are not able to see into at this stage of our evolution perhaps in the distant future, some of us may be able to do so. However, the being that presented these papers had this to say about the goings on in that dimension at the time Jesus' body lay in the tomb.

The midwayer stated that at 2:45 Sunday morning, the Paradise Incarnation Commission consisting of seven unidentified Paradise personalities, arrived on the scene where Jesus' body rested, and right away, they dispersed themselves about the tomb, (Paradise is the ultimate heaven.) At ten minutes before three, powerful vibrations of mingling material and Morontia activities began to come from Joseph's tomb, and at two minutes past three o'clock that Sunday morning, April 9, 30 A.D., the resurrected Morontia form and personality of Jesus of Nazareth came forth from the tomb.

After the resurrected spiritual body of Jesus had come forth from the burial tomb, the body of flesh in which he lived and worked for almost 36 years laying there in the sepulcher undisturbed in any way; the seal of Pilate was intact, the soldiers remained on guard. The temple guards were on continuous duty; the Roman guards were changed at midnight. None of these so-called keepers who were watching over the tomb suspected that the one they were watching over was now a discarded form that had no further connection with the resurrected Morontia personality of Jesus. This is the most critical reason Jesus allowed himself to die on the cross to prove to us that life is a continuum. It is an important fact that the Western world has been ignoring for 2,000 years. They replaced it with the sacrificial lamb which has no meaning in the spiritual world whatsoever.

After Jesus' resurrection, the chief archangels of the resurrection approached Gabriel and asked for the body of Jesus, and he said: [189:2.1] "We may not participate in the Morontia resurrection of the bestowal experience of Michael (Jesus) our sovereign, but we would have his mortal remains put in our custody for immediate dissolution. We do not propose to employ our technique of dematerialization; we merely wish to invoke the process of the acceleration of time. It is enough that we have seen the sovereign live and die on Urantia; the hosts of heaven would be spared the memory of enduring the sight of the slow decay of the human form of the Creator and upholder of a universe. In the name of the celestial intelligence of all Nebadon, I ask for a mandate giving me the custody of the mortal body of Jesus of Nazareth and empowering us to proceed with its immediate dissolution."

After Gabriel had granted the chief archangel his request, he summoned numerous hosts of all orders of celestial personalities, and then with the help of the midwayers, proceeded to take possession of Jesus' physical body. The dead body of Jesus was a physical, material body and it could not be removed out of the tomb as the Morontia resurrection body of Jesus had been. As they were ready to move the body from the grave for its disposal of near instantaneous dissolution, the midwayers were assigned to roll the stones from the entrance of the monument. The

larger of these two stones was a vast circular stone much like a millstone, and it moved in a groove, chiseled out of the rock so that it could be rolled back and forth to open and close the tomb.

When the Jewish guards and the Roman soldier's keeper of the tomb, saw the huge stone moving away from the entrance of the grave in the dim light of the morning, apparently by no visible means, they were overwhelmed with fear panicked, made haste and fled. The Jewish guards fled to their homes; after a while, they went to the temple and told all of what had happened. The Roman soldiers fled to the fortress of Antonia and reported to the centurion what they had seen as soon as he came on duty.

The hypocritical Jewish leaders tried to get rid of Jesus by bribing the traitorous Judas, and now they are embarrassed with a perplexing situation. Instead of punishing the guards for leaving their post, they resorted to bribing these guards and the Roman soldiers. They paid off each of these 20 men with a certain sum of money. And they gave them orders to tell people that while they slept during the night, Jesus' disciples slipped among them and took the body away. Those Jewish leaders made a solemn promise to the soldiers that if Pilate found out what had happened, they would defend them.

The Christian belief in the resurrection were based on the fact the tomb was empty where Jesus lay. This was a fact, but this is not the truth about the resurrection; no one at that time ever imagined what was going on behind the scenes. Because Jesus' body was not there when the first believers arrived, they assumed the physical body had resurrected. The body was not there because the Celestials been granted their request to take the body of Jesus for its special and unique dissolution it returned to the dust from whence it came. Even in the Christian Bible, it states that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom, 1 Corinthians 15:50. The mortal remains of Jesus went through the same natural process of elemental disintegration as all other human bodies, only the process as far as Jesus' body was concerned greatly accelerated to the point that it was almost instantaneous. There were 1,000 people that saw Jesus in his Morontia body. There is no doubt that those who saw Jesus in his higher body remained in a state of impressive wonder for the rest of their lives.

Chapter 14

The God Within

For most of my life, I have heard of the “God within.” Some write about the God within in a roundabout way but never do I recall anyone giving a lecture or writing a book to any extent about exactly who or what is the God within. While reading The Urantia Book, I found that there are around 40 pages on the subject; I was like a hungry man gulping up those pages. Studying about higher worlds is stranger than fiction. Let us peek into the peculiar world of the God within.

[1:4.1] *The infinity of the perfection of God is such that it eternally constitutes him in mystery. And the greatest of all the unfathomable mysteries of God is the phenomenon of the divine indwelling of mortal minds. The manner in which the Universal Father sojourns with the creatures of time is the most profound of all universe mysteries; the divine presence in the mind of man is the mystery of mysteries.*

When you are through down here, when your course has been run in temporary form on earth, when your trial trip in the flesh is finished, when the dust that composes the mortal tabernacle returns to the earth whence it came; then, it is revealed, the indwelling "Spirit shall return to God who gave it. There sojourns within each moral being of this planet a fragment of God, a part and parcel of divinity. It is not yet yours by right of possession, but it is designedly intended to be one with you if you survive the mortal existence."

The churches of today do not emphasize that God dwells in the mind of man, but the Bible mentions it in several places. For example, 1 Corinthians 3:16 reads: “Know ye not that ye are the temple of God and that the spirit of God dwelleth in you?” Now we shall proceed to the part of The Urantia Book that teaches about the God within.

According to The Urantia Book, God did not always dwell in man, during our ancient ancestors’ long pilgrimage to higher states of consciousness. It was after they reached a certain point in their evolution that a portion of God came and dwelled in man. With the information we have, it appears our ancestors started on our planet as a one-celled ameba made with the ingredients of the dust of the earth by beings on higher worlds called Life Carriers.

After the Life Carriers created the seeds that were made of the dust of the ground chemical of the earth as in Genesis 2:7, the spirit of God breathed the breath of life into that creation, and it became a living thing. It may have taken millions of years for those seeds to reach the human stage; but in the mind of God, it happened instantaneously, and to us humans, we are still in the process of evolving. It is a condition the human brain is not yet capable of grasping how something could have already happened in the mind of God. But to man, we are still in the process of evolving. It seems to be the same situation where the metaphysicians claim all is the “Now” there is no past or future. For the average person, this is difficult to understand, just as Einstein’s law of relativity is difficult to understand: that the speed of light travels at a staggering 186,282

miles per second. If a train with passengers can travel at a rate of 100,000 miles per second, and the passengers see a beam of light passing by, logic would tell them that the beam of light would be passing the train at 86,282 miles per second. But the law of relativity says the light will still be leaving the train at 186,282 miles per second as if the train were standing still. Problems like that I leave for the physicists.

The Origin and Nature of the God Within

The Urantia Book is broken down into papers; in paper 107 the writer begins to write about the God within. There are 196 papers in The Urantia Book. They refer to the God within as the Thought Adjuster or Mystery Monitor. Although our heavenly Father is personally and forever present in Paradise, the very center of the universe, He is also present in the world of time and space in the minds of His countless children. Our Father in heaven is farthest removed from us and, at the same time, most intimately near his sons and daughters on earth: a paradox. God loves us so much that He shared a portion of Himself with us.

At this stage of our evolution, we are not able to recognize that God dwells within us, but as we become more spiritually evolved, we will wake up to the fact of the indwelling God; even now, strange things are happening in our minds we are not able to explain. When our ancient ancestors reached the stage where they were able to make their own decisions and not rely entirely on animal instinct, this was the time the higher worlds considered our ancestors as real human beings. That is when the Thought Adjuster came and dwelled in the minds of our ancient ancestors.

Many religions talk about the God within, but few seem to know the purpose of the indwelling of God. When I reached the section of The Urantia Book where it is written about the purpose of the God within, I kept my eyes wide open in fear of missing something. It states one of the primary goals of the indwelling God is to help create the soul, and to direct the soul to higher worlds, or if one prefers, heaven, and eternal life—Paradise, where the Universal Father of all resides.

Our ancient ancestors did not have a soul until they reached the human stage and were able to reason and make decisions for themselves. At that time, the Thought Adjuster and the essence of the human being created the living soul, see Genesis 2:7. As I mentioned before, the God within enters the human mind at around age six; but The Urantia Book does not specify what age the soul is created in the human being. I would imagine it is at an early age.

When our ancient ancestors reached the stage of their evolution where they could make their own decisions, the Thought Adjuster came and dwelled in the mind of humanity; it was only then that they became living souls. The seeds that became human beings were on this planet millions of years before they acquired a human soul. In other words, the human being and the Thought Adjuster are the parents of the soul. The soul is that part of us that has the potential to obtain eternal life.

I imagine the Higher Beings used the name Thought Adjuster for the God within because it is so close to the purpose of the indwelling God, and if we allowed it to, it would synchronize our soul to the vibration of the Universal Father. It is the Thought Adjuster that creates the unquenchable yearning for God in man. We sometimes cause significant harm to ourselves and others trying desperately to fill the void in many ways; sadly, we usually misinterpret that void to mean something else. For example, yearning for a mate and when we get one, we find ourselves with the wrong person. This yearning at times causes many difficulties because we don't understand it. To fill that void is to feed the soul; that is to do God's will.

When we reach the higher worlds, our first stop will be the mansions Jesus spoke of: “In my Father’s house there are many mansions.” (John 14:2). About those mansions, we will continue our education. Many on this planet are beginning to recognize that our experience on this planet is for our training—good and evil. Sometimes, as Jesus mentioned in the parable of Jonah, when we try to run away, and we find ourselves in the wrong vibrations, we go through unnecessary experiences.

In the higher mansions, we will be taught that we are nothing but baby souls at the beginning of our ascending career, even though down here on Urantia, we may be considered senior citizens. The first mansion world is the place where we will acquire new bodies. There are seven of these mansion worlds we must experience before ascending to higher dimensions where we shall become, progressively, more spiritual beings. It will take many years before we reach Paradise, our goal, where the Father of all is resident. Long before achieving this final goal, we’ll have to merge with the Thought Adjuster, the God within, and the soul will become one; once we have reached this stage of our evolution, there is no more going out as the book of Revelations proclaims. Then we will evolve into the image of God. And we will have evolved into true Sons and Daughters of God. As I mentioned earlier, Enoch was the first of humanity to merge with the God within, as stated in the Bible. Enoch lived 365 years on earth, however long he lived it was much longer than the average person, and he had enough time to merge with the God within. On this planet, we are not looking at the big picture; we are limiting ourselves. In years past, we could say we did not have the correct information, but today, all we need to do is seek and learn to follow the lead of the God within. We are senior citizens who should be looking forward to unbelievable glory and experiences in higher dimensions.

Through the years, we have been conditioned on this planet to accept the worst in life; a hellish and damn attitude almost everyone has admitted. Many today now realize there cannot be such a thing as hell in God's universe. Now, we are beginning to understand our Father in heaven is a loving and kind Father as Jesus had said; all we must do is believe, and we will go to the higher worlds that we call heaven. We now know with the studies the social scientists are doing today, that anything we need and yearn for with conviction, we will receive, and it will manifest in the physical, even in the healing of dreadful cancers, just by being still Psalm 46:10 states: “Be still and know that I am God.” Some scientists are convinced there is energy not yet understood that saturates the human bodies when they are in what seems to be an altered state of consciousness, and that the person being healed is in a peaceful place. The Higher Beings who were responsible for bringing forth this section of papers made it clear that the Thought Adjuster is an undiluted and unmixed part of God. I imagine this is one of the reasons one of them made the statement that God is sharing a portion of Himself with his sons and daughters on earth; yet, he has remained unchanged and is the mystery of all mysteries. The following is a short quote from The Urantia Book: [107:1.3] *As to the time of their beginning separate existences apart from the absoluteness of the First Source and Center, we do not know; neither do we know their number. We know very little concerning their careers until they arrive on the planets of time to indwell human minds, but from that time on we are more or less familiar with their cosmic progressions up to and including the consummation of their triune destinies: attainment of personality by fusion with some mortal ascender, attainment of personality by fiat of the Universal Father, or liberation from the known assignments of Thought Adjusters.* ²

The Mission of the Thought Adjusters

It is the mission of the Thought Adjusters to be the Universal Father to the mortal creatures of time and space; that is the most basic of the divine gifts from God. Their purpose is also that of elevating the mortal minds and translating the immortal souls of men up to the celestial heights and spiritual perfection of Paradise. The Adjuster also helps in transforming the human into the divine nature of the eternal Finaliter. (Finaliter is the human's goal.) Fusion with the Adjuster will bring forth a new type of potential perfected creature.

The Adjusters took on a difficult assignment when they volunteered to dwell in the minds of humans on planet earth. Our Adjusters are the potential of our next order of existence, our eternal sonship with God. The Higher Being who passed on this information writes that our Thought Adjusters are more concerned about our future life, not so much this earthly life. They are called heavenly helpers, not earthly helpers. As a matter of fact, they are not interested in making our life easy, but in making our life reasonably difficult and rugged so our decision-making will be stimulated and multiplied. As I had mentioned elsewhere, this earth is a schoolhouse, but it is the Adjuster's job to help us through the trials and tribulations if we allow them. According to those Higher Beings, our future life is more important to the Adjusters than the present life; they seem to be preparing us for higher dimensions. They are interested in our souls reaching higher states of consciousness and learning how to control mind energy. Our ancient ancestors began their journey through the subconscious mind, now most are at the stage of conscious beings, and with the help of the God within, we will become super conscious beings.

The constant changing emotions of joy and sorrow in our daily lives are due to the ever-changing electrochemical, environmental and psychic reactions in our bodies. The Adjusters cannot arbitrarily change our feelings of fear to the conviction of love and confidence; that is our job. When we execute those decisions that will deliver us from the fetters of fear, we are supplying the psychic fulcrum to which the Adjuster may add the physical lever that will help lift us up to advancing enlightenment. Whatever your adversities in life, you can overcome with the help of the God within.

When the conflict of what is right and wrong (not just what we think is right or wrong) is at the forefront of our minds, we can be sure the Adjuster has participated in some way. Just because we are unconscious of the Adjuster's presence in us, it doesn't in the least take away from its value or reality. The God within loves us and wants us to survive. Their work in us is flawless, if we follow their lead, they will guide us to the perfection of Paradise.

After the Adjuster came and dwelled in the minds of humans, humankind was created in the image of God; this distinguishes us from animals. The psychologists wonder why we humans are much superior intellectually to the ape kingdom, now that scientists have deciphered the coded message of the human genome and compared them to that of the chimpanzees' family DNA. They've noticed there is only a slight difference between their DNA and ours. If psychologists took the time and read The Urantia Book, they wouldn't be puzzled, especially if they read the papers on the God within.

We are the human parent, and the Adjuster is the divine parent of our higher and advancing self, the evolving soul, and it is this soul the judges and censors discern when they decree our survival to new and higher worlds and the never-ending existence in constant communication with our faithful partner, God—the Adjuster. Page 1193 of The Urantia Book gives us a little insight as to how Higher Beings see the Adjuster: [108:6.7] *The Adjusters are the eternal ancestors, the divine originals, of your evolving immortal souls; they are the unceasing urge that leads man to attempt the mastery of the material and present existence in the light of the spiritual and future career. The Monitors are the prisoners of undying hope, the founts of everlasting progression. And how they do enjoy communicating with their subjects in more or less direct channels! How they rejoice when they can dispense with symbols and other methods of indirection and flash their messages straight to the intellects of their human partners!*

You humans have begun an endless unfolding of an almost infinite panorama, a limitless expanding of never-ending, ever-widening spheres of opportunity for exhilarating service, matchless adventure, sublime uncertainty, and boundless attainment. When the clouds gather overhead, your faith should accept the fact of the presence of the indwelling Adjuster, and thus you should be able to look beyond the mists of mortal uncertainty into the clear shining of the sun of eternal righteousness on the beckoning heights of the mansion worlds of Satania. ³

Awarding an imperfect being with freedom is to impose upon the inevitable individual tragedy because of free will and our capability to make mistakes. It is the nature of the Adjusters to share the suffering with those in loving companionship affectionately. This being went on to say as far as he was concerned, he regarded the love and devotion of a Thought Adjuster as the most genuinely divine affection in all of creation. He mentioned the love and ministry of the Creative Sons for their creations is magnificent, but the devotion of the Adjusters for the individual is Father-like. It appears the Paradise Father has reserved this form of personal contact as his creative prerogative, and there is nothing in all the universes that can compare to the love and devotion of the God within. We humans have not evolved enough to appreciate and understand the beauty of this devotion. The good news, though, is that many of us are beginning to realize this fact. We shouldn't think of the Adjusters as living in our physical brain; they are not organic parts of our bodies. It would be more proper if we envision the Thought Adjusters as indwelling the minds of man rather than thinking of them as confined to a single organ. The Adjusters are efficient ministers to the higher phases of the human mind; they are wise and experienced manipulators of the spiritual potential of the human intellect, and the Thought Adjuster resides in the super-conscious mind.

The Adjuster, the God within, is dedicated to the formidable task of directing us inward and upward to the heavenly haven of happiness. Through the years, we have been taught heaven was up there someplace, but according to The Urantia Book, it is not up there but, is located on inner dimension. Throughout the years, we in the Western World have never considered inner worlds and only recently have our physicists started to study other dimensions to any great extent seriously, and they are doing excellent work in this field. Many scientists have put forth theories that there are several different dimensions and have done mathematics to prove it. I am inclined to believe what the Egyptians called the Nether World in the Egyptians Book of the Dead, were their way of expressing inner worlds; they had no concepts of inner dimensions as we understand it. They believed they would continue their lives in the other world where they left off in this world.

The Adjusters are kind and loving leaders, our safe and sure guides through the dark times of our earthly life. They urge us steadily forward in the direction of progressive perfection. It is their wish we would love them more thoroughly and cherish them more affectionately. The divine indwellers are mainly concerned with our spiritual preparation for the next stage of our never-ending existence; they are also interested in our material well-being and our achievements on earth. They are happy to contribute to our health, happiness, and real prosperity. They are not indifferent to our progress in all matters of earthly life that is not harmful to our future life. The Adjusters are with us through every disaster and sickness that does not destroy the mentality. All environmental poisons significantly reduce the effort of the Adjusters to exalt the material minds. Also, the mental poison of fear, anger, envy, jealousy, suspicion, and intolerance does great harm to one's progress. On page 1204 The Urantia Book, it states:

[110:1.6] *Today you are passing through the period of the courtship of your Adjuster; and if you only prove faithful to the trust reposed in you by the divine spirit who seeks your mind and soul in eternal union, there will eventually ensue that morontia oneness, that supernal harmony, that cosmic co-ordination, that divine attunement, that celestial fusion, that never-ending blending of identity, that oneness of being which is so perfect and final that even the most experienced personalities can never segregate or recognize as separate identities the fusion partners—mortal man and divine Adjuster.* ⁴

Adjuster and the Human Will

When the Adjusters indwell the human minds, they bring with them the ideal careers for the humans they indwell. This is determined by the Higher Beings of their order that is resident in a place the Higher Beings call Divinington. (I am quite sure the names that are related to us are not the real names, the real names are secret.)

We, humans, subjected to predestination, but it's not ordained that we must accept this divine predestination; in fact, we are at full liberty to change part or all the Adjusters' programs. As I mentioned before, any change in our direction could change our entire destination. It is the Adjusters' mission to bring about in us such mind changes and to make a spiritual adjustment that we might willingly and intelligently accept; under no circumstances do these divine monitors ever take advantage of us or arbitrarily influence us in our choices or decisions. They are always respectful of our will. A divine Adjuster will never spiritualize any human being against his or her will. Survival is a gift from God, which must be desired by the creatures of time. The Adjusters are not trying to control our thinking but spiritualize it to eternalize it. The success of our Adjusters in guiding us through mortal life and bringing about our survival depends not so much on the theories of our belief, but on the decisions, we make our determination and steadfast faith.

This being continues with his writing, saying he couldn't help but notice so many of us spend so much time and thought on the trifles of living and almost completely overlook the more essential realities of everlasting importance, like those accomplishments which are concerned with the development between ourselves and our Adjusters. One of the most important things for us humans to accomplish during our lifetime is to tune into the divinity of the indwelling Adjusters; one of the marvelous things we can achieve is a true understanding and the consecration of the eternal aims of the divine spirit who works in our minds. I quote: [110:3.4] *Co-operation with the Thought Adjusters does not entail self-torture, and self-abasement; the ideal life is one of loving service rather than an existence of fearful apprehension.* ⁵

We shouldn't confuse and misunderstand the duty and influence of the Adjusters with what called conscience; they are not directly related. Conscience is a function of the psychological reaction. It is not to be despised, but it is hardly the voice of God to the soul, which evidently the Adjusters would be if such a sound could be heard.

The Adjuster cannot coordinate and synchronize two wholly different and diverse types of thinking as the human and divine in one lifetime. When they do, those souls are conveyed to the mansion worlds without death; when this happens, their physical bodies are entirely disintegrated. While we are asleep, the Adjusters try to register their creations in the higher levels of mortal minds, and some of our bizarre dreams are a sign of their failure to make contact. The Adjuster of the human being through whom the communication made for the papers used to compile The Urantia Book, enjoyed a wide range of activity because of the human almost complete indifference to any outward manifestation of the Adjuster's spiritual presence. It was fortunate that this human remained consciously entirely unconcerned about the entire procedure. In fact, this person was endowed with one of the most highly experienced Adjusters. But the experiences Adjusters acquire from other associations throughout the universes do not always lead to fusion with their host.

Here is a sample of how the Thought Adjuster works. When I started reading The Urantia Book, the book was so huge I read it in sections commencing with the part I was familiar with an example Adam and Eve. After reading the book for a while, I thought I read in the book we humans should read the book cover to cover starting from the front, that way we will understand the book better. And after we finished the book try to write a book, according to our feeling and thoughts about the book in our own words. And it continued our fellow humans would understand the text better coming from another human. After thinking I read that in the book, I started reading it from the beginning. Around ten years later after writing my autobiography and a self-published book on the basics in The Urantia Book one day, it dawns on me I have been reading, studying, and researching that book for about ten years and I don't recall seeing the passage I mentioned above again. I went to my computer and started a search in the book. I could not find anything relating to humans writing their book. Only then I realize perhaps my Adjuster placed those thoughts in my mind while I slept. I was so convinced that information was in The Urantia Book the idea never crossed my mind it wasn't there in ten years.

The Seven Psychic Circles

The Higher Beings say the total of personality realization in a material world is within the completion of seven psychic circles of mortal potentiality. But finishing all seven circles of cosmic growth does not mean we have fused with the Adjuster. The conclusion of all seven is the beginning of those steps that are necessary to Adjuster fusion.

The seven circles are not primarily intellectual, nor are they only about the soul; they have to do with personality status, mind attainment, soul growth and Adjuster attunement. It appears we start at the seventh circle down to the first, which is the greatest. When one develops the intellectual mind faster than the spiritual, it causes communication with the Adjuster to be difficult and dangerous. Also, overdevelopment of the spiritual tends to create an extreme and perverted interpretation of the spirit leading to the divine indweller. In short, we need to find balance in all that we do.

The Adjuster cannot speak directly with us until we reach the first and final circle of progressive mortal achievement. This primary and last level represents the highest possible realization of mind-Adjuster relationship in the human experience before the liberation of the evolving soul from the confines of the physical body. The achievement of the first psychic circle is the closest possible of the material mind and the Thought Adjuster in human experience:

[110:7.1] *The achievement of the seven cosmic circles does not equal Adjuster fusion. There are many mortals living on Urantia who have attained their circles; but fusion depends on yet other greater and more sublime spiritual achievements, upon the attainment of a final and complete attunement of the mortal will with the will of God as it is resident in the Thought Adjuster.*

When a human being has completed the circles of cosmic achievement, and further, when the final choosing of the mortal will permits the Adjuster to complete the association of human identity with the morontial soul during evolutionary and physical life, then do such consummated liaisons of soul and Adjuster go on independently to the mansion worlds, and there is issued the mandate from Uversa which provides for the immediate fusion of the Adjuster and the morontial soul. This fusion during physical life instantly consumes the material body; the human beings who might witness such a spectacle would only observe the translating mortal disappear in chariots of fire. ⁶


Elijah is one of the figures in the Bible who is believed to have merged with the Adjuster. In 2 Kings 2:11, it reads: “And it came to pass as they still went on, and talked, that behold, there appeared a chariot of fire, and horses of fire, and parted them both asunder, and Elijah went up by the whirlwind into heaven.”

Before mortal fusion, the Adjuster shares our destiny and experience; they are us. After the merging of the soul, all the knowledge and value of the one becomes the possession of the other, so the two are one entity. This new being is of the eternal past, as well as the infinite future. When the evolving soul and the divine Adjuster are finally merged, each gains experience qualities of the other, when this happens, we humans will evolve into eternal beings. We started out as God’s lowest will creatures compared to the Higher Beings and will develop into some of the highest administrators in all the universes; the Higher Beings call this state Finaliters. God loves all of us, and if we pay more attention to the God within, our lives will change for the better. The result of this merger you’ll find in The Urantia Book 109:1.5. The first stage of Adjuster evolution is attained in fusion with the surviving soul of a mortal being. Thus, while you are in nature evolving inward and upward from man to God, the Adjusters are in nature evolving outward and downward from God to man; and so will the final product of this union of divinity and humanity eternally be the son of man and the son of God.

Here is an example of how the Thought Adjuster works. When I started reading The Urantia Book the book was so huge I started reading it in sections, commencing with the parts I was familiar with—for example Adam and Eve.

After reading the book in this manner for some time, I thought I read somewhere in the book; we humans should read the book from cover to cover starting from the beginning. We may not understand everything we read, but we will appreciate the book better by reading the papers in the order the Higher Beings presented them. It continues after we finished reading the entire book, we should try to write a book expressing what we understand in our own words, our fellow humans would understand it better coming from another human.

After reading the entire book, I was in awe. I had no formal education, but I knew I had to teach myself how to write a book. Around ten years later, after writing my autobiography and a self-published book on the basics of The Urantia Book, it dawned on me I have been reading, studying, and researching The Urantia Book for about ten years and I don't recall seeing a passage urging us to read the book cover to cover. I went to my computer and started a search in The Urantia Book. I couldn't find anything relating to how humans should read the book. Only then did I realize that perhaps my Thought Adjuster placed those thoughts in my mind while I slept. I was so convinced that information was in The Urantia Book, in ten years, the idea never crossed my mind that passage did not exist in the book. Here is something amazing I recently discovered.

FREE  ! FRIENDS: WITH THE HELP OF A BOOK TITLED THE URANTIA BOOK, I BELIEVE I HAVE DISCOVERED THE REASON FOR THE GENIUSES IN HUMANITY.

1 Corinthians 3:16 states "Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, that the spirit of God dwelleth in you?" The Urantia Book has about 40 pages on the God within. Only that book calls it the Thought Adjuster Paper 107 (Origin and Nature of the Thought Adjuster). When Jesus said in Luke 17:11: "The kingdom of God is within you." He was talking about the God within. In Genesis 1:26 it says: "Let us make man in our image, after our likeness." They were talking about the spirit of God in humanity, not that we look like God, like the picture Michelangelo drew.

God is spirit. The Urantia Book explains the spirit of God within us is not the same in everyone some spirits within have more experience than other spirits, the spirits are individual beings, how are the spirits of God different, well that I don't know. That is why Nikola Tesla, Albert Einstein, Steve Jobs, and India's great mathematician Srinivasa Ramanujan were the genius they were, somehow the God spirit within them was activated, and almost all of them say the information came from someplace other than themselves. If you read The Urantia Book on the God within you would understand better what I am trying to express, you can read it Free see the end of this post. If you look at the History Channel's Ancient Alien, Season 1 Episode 9 Aliens and the Superhuman Mind, it is all about humanity's Geniuses.

I know this sounds strange, but humanity's real knowledge has been hidden from us for thousands of years, and it all started with Genesis 6:4 those celestial sons of God that had children with humans the first sinners on earth.

After the seed of humanity mutated through the animal kingdom for millions of years and reached the stage of Hunter-gatherers, they were ready to be civilized. The higher worlds we were conditioned to call heaven sent 100 beings that took on corporal bodies and came to earth to help civilized humanity Hunter-gatherers. We know them as celestial sons of God, the Sumerians called them Anunnaki (those who came from heaven) they were the same beings as the sons of God in Genesis 6:4.

Friends: there is so much more to this lost history, I compiled as much as I could in a book and published it on my website. To download the FREE book, click on the PDF sign at Thetruthwillcityoufreex.com. You can also read or listen to The Urantia Book at <https://:uversapress.com>. copy and paste the address into the URL. Please share.

Summary

The Reason for Being

After millions of years of mutating through the animal kingdom humanity became human. They could think for themselves, not relying on instincts alone, they developed free will. This was when the higher worlds we call heaven sent beings to help civilize humanity. They were the Anunnaki of the Sumerians (those who from heaven came), and the sons of God of Genesis 6:4 who had children by the daughters of men were the same beings, that became the men of renown. Their descendants became the ones who attempted to build the Tower of Babel, and after thousands of years became the people of the Land of Nod, the Aryans that invaded India and started the caste system, and Sumerians very advanced, people. They were building megalithic structures when most of humanity was in the hunter-gatherer's stage of their evolution. After the Anunnaki or sons of God were here for thousands of years, Lucifer rebelled, and all hell broke loose. Out of 100 sons of God that came 60 rebelled along with Lucifer, they were the ones that had children with humans. When the sons of God arrived on our planet, they couldn't use the bodies they used on higher worlds. When they arrived surgeons from a higher universe came also, they took plasma from the most advanced humans, and with bioengineering created bodies for those sons of God. That is why they were able to have children by humans; their bodies were made with human genes.

Since the time humanity escaped the depths of the subconscious mind and became conscious beings, they have asked themselves what is it all for? What is the reason for my existence and being conscious of this existence? It appears we evolve through three different stages as human beings: subconscious, conscious, and far into the future, we will evolve into super-conscious beings.

For years, our ancient ancestors have struggled to understand these questions, and for thousands of years, beings from higher worlds that we learned to call heaven have provided answers. You can see bits and pieces of this information they provided throughout the pages of ancient history and how this information has been tampered with by evil people wanting to mislead humanity for their Satanic reasons.

The power elite does not want us to know the truth about God because it takes away their power. They do not want people to know about Unidentified Flying Objects (UFOs) because that tells us there are smarter beings in the universe than man and that diminishes their power. The truth will set us free and give us access to the God within, and that also takes away their control. Without this power, they will have to face who they are, and that is a human being no more, no less that, will burst their inflated egos. That is the nature of the original Nodites, the rebellious ones.

The History Channel is correct in asserting in their episodes of "Ancient Aliens" extraterrestrials came to our planet thousands of years ago; in fact, the first beings came to our planet 500,000 years ago, according to The Urantia Book, and mentioned in the Bible, Genesis 6:4, that the celestial sons of God had offspring by the daughters of men. Their offspring became the people of the land of Nod who attempted to build the Tower of Babel; this was years 50,000 years ago.

Those Sons of God originally came to earth to help civilize the tribes of the earth. Sixty out of 100 of those Sons and Daughters of God rebelled along with Lucifer during the time of his rebellion. Before the uprising, they had the Tree of Life, and they were able to live indefinitely on our planet; after their rebellion, the Tree of Life was taken away from them by the angels of God, and they were as the mortals they came to help; they would surely die. They did the next best thing. Since their bodies were created with the plasma of human beings, they were able to have children by them.

The second group of extraterrestrials who came to our planet was Adam and Eve. Their bodies were rematerialized I assumed by Avalon surgeons. They came as biological up lifters for humanity. Humans had reached their biological peak. That is the reason Adam and Eve were commanded to be fruitful and multiply; they were to start a new race of people. After their offspring had reached a certain number, they were to go out from the Garden and interbreed with the tribes of the earth until their genes spread throughout the land.

After Adam and Eve defaulted, their offspring attempted to fulfill their parents' purpose of spreading their more advanced genes, they were taken to different continents on the midwayers' transporters I believe, just as they had taken Adam. (The midwayers were able to come into our dimension through some portal with which our scientists are not yet familiar.) The descendants of Adam and Eve were able to inbreed with the tribes around the world and build those large structures. That is why those structures look so much like each other around the world. In some of those places, they even had landing ports.

Today, this same information above was presented to us in The Urantia Book, and it has been pushed aside by some of the academia that is mostly controlled by the power elite. They control just about everything important to man and his survival. But after studying The Urantia Book's 2,097 pages over 20 years, and writing about it, I realize that there is no way a human could have written this book without help from a higher source. The spiritual information in the book is too advanced and consistent for a human to put together at this time. If academia studied The Urantia Book, instead of scanning through its pages, they would see this.

The Urantia Book has the full story of the history of our planet; that is how I was able to understand the origin of the Aryan Race. There is no way I could have fitted the pieces together without The Urantia Book. Today, you'll find different religious sects running around like chickens with their heads cut off, trying to prove one thing or another about their religions things that happened thousands of years ago, and how they are the inheritors. But if you don't have the actual history of your ancient ancestors, how can you be sure if your information is correct? The information we use in our "Ancient History" is so distorted that it's difficult to believe any part of it, and when you do, it leads you down the wrong path.

As we watch the world's news and ponder the different people of the world, we realize just about every advanced country in the world is convinced that other planets in the universe are thriving with beings, perhaps much more advanced than we are. If this is the case, and many believe it is, why couldn't these Higher Beings save the history of our planet and present it to use now that we have come of age?

I believe evolution is the key to understanding everlasting life. We have been evolving for millions of years from that was seed that planted in the ocean of life. Some scientists believe the seed of life that brought forth our type of species was planted, over 400 million years ago. When

we reach the human stage in our evolution, which is when a significant change takes place, that's the stage where we can become immortal beings.

This earth is our first step, and it is by all indications, the worst. As we advance into higher dimensions, we will become progressively more spiritual. And we will be allowed to accept immortality, but not everyone wants to do God's will or to live forever. Those who don't want to accept immortality will go to what the Bible calls the second death (Revelation 21:8). Their state of consciousness will be demolished. They will exist no more. Please note that there is no such thing as hell. Hell is an archaic pagan belief that somehow crept into the Bible.

It took me almost one year to read through The Urantia Book. At the first reading, I tried to analyze just about every page. I don't believe a human being of today has the in-depth spirituality to compile such a complicated work, even with all our advanced technology as I've consistently stated. I certainly don't believe there is a human on this planet that spiritually evolved. I think we need a little more time.

According to The Urantia Book, our planet Earth's crust started to cool down around one billion years ago, when those Higher Beings gave our planet its name, Urantia. Around 600 million years ago, a scouting party was sent to our world from those higher dimensions to report on its suitability for a life experiment station. About 550 million years ago, those Higher Beings who are called Life Carriers in the higher worlds, initiated the original life pattern on our planet in its sea, when the water on our earth reached a specific desired briny mixture. Around 500 million years ago, first marine, and then vegetable life was well-established on Urantia. The transition from vegetable life to animal life took place in the briny sea 450 million years ago. Eventually, some of those animals left the sea, and crawled upon the land, as soon as plant life, and the atmosphere on earth was able to support them.

After millions of years out of the sea, there were colossal land animals on our planet. After millions of years, those vast land animals began to disappear and smaller primates began appearing on the scene; many millions of years later, humans began to make their appearance and eventually evolved into thinking beings. It was during this period when our ancient ancestors were able to make their own decisions, not relying on instinct alone. At that time the Adjuster, the spirit of God (the God within), came and indwelt the minds of our ancient ancestors. If we read Genesis in the Bible, it mentions in several places that God created man; in Genesis 1:27: "So God created man in his image in the image of God created he him, male and female created he them." According to The Urantia Book, the man started out like an animal but had the potential of becoming god-like. Genesis 2:7, it states that God made man of the dust of the ground, breathed into his nostrils the breath of life and man became a living soul. It appears those ancient writers recorded the time that God came and indwelt the minds of man as a separate creation, but they didn't understand that was when man became a real human being. The purpose of this indweller was to create the soul and to lead humankind to higher worlds or higher dimensions.

At this stage with the combined forces of the God-within and the essence of the human being, the soul was created, and the human individual became a living soul. The God within and the human are the parents of the potential immortal soul, and the body of the individual becomes the temple of Gods as the Bible refers to it 1 Corinthians 3:11 "Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that the spirit of God dwelleth in you?" It is at this stage of their development that humans became free-will creatures to choose to do God's will and became immortal beings. The soul that was created by the God within and the free will of the human are what survives death. This soul survival is one of the main

reasons Jesus allowed himself to be put to death because he wanted to prove to us that the soul survives death. Three days after the death of the body, the soul will wake up in another dimension and continue its evolving if it chooses to do God's will. Otherwise, that soul will sleep until the resurrection. In short, our living and dying are not in vain.

If we decide to do God's will and go into higher worlds, we won't become perfect beings suddenly after reaching those higher worlds. However, it will take millions of years of evolving in that higher dimension or other worlds to become perfected beings, and, in time, we will become what those Higher Beings refer to as Finaliters. At this stage of our development, we will enter Paradise where we will see the Father. We will be super-universe administrators. If we think that is a long time, we need to ponder the years it took our ancestors to become Homo sapiens; only these years in the higher worlds will be much more pleasant. We who started out as God's lowest evolving will creatures will become part of God's greatest administrators in the universe, and that is because we will know every stage from the lowest to the highest. Didn't the Master Jesus teach us the last will be first?

To the best of my ability, I share with my fellow humans, my understanding of life at this stage of my development. Using The Urantia Book as my guide, and my past experiences, I have found my purpose in life and since that time, peace and serenity have been my constant companion. When one reaches the point in life, where they understand their origination and know their destiny, it is a beautiful feeling. We, of this planet, need desperately to expand our understanding of life. Some may ask what good will it do one to know these things. I ask, what good did it do those who were once illiterate to learn to read and write? The difference is that great. Although you may not see it now, when you get there, you will look back in awesome wonder. Many are suffering, and they don't know what is wrong with them. They haven't a clue. They've denied their souls the knowledge that it needs; the World Soul is suffering from frustration. They are stuck in dead doctrines that lead nowhere. It is ludicrous for people to continue to accept those doctrines as they are, and they are hindering themselves from understanding higher spiritual laws.

The world we live in reflects our thoughts, if you want to live a better life, change your thoughts. Proverbs 23:7 states, "As a man thinks in his heart so is, he." We all can change, and it won't happen overnight, so don't expect it to, it takes time. But if you want something better than you have, that is what you must do.

So, my readers, if we don't understand from whence, we came, it's impossible to know where we are going. In this work, I made all efforts to share with you my understanding of our planet's ancient history, as I gleaned it from The Urantia Book, and my life experiences; and it has helped me to see with my soul's eyes the God within. I pray that the light of God will shine upon you always.

Lucas, a seeker

Additional Reading

Finkelstein, Israel, and Silberman, Neil, Asher. The Bible Unearthed, Touchstone 2002.

Best, Robert M, Noah's Ark, And The Ziusudra Epic, Enlil Press, 1999.

Bramley, William, The Gods of Eden, Avon Books, 1989, 1990.

The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation 1955. No known Author.

Calleman. Carl Johan, The Mayan Calendar, and The Transformation of Consciousness, Bear & Company 2004.

Collins, Andrew, From the Ashes of Angels, The Forbidden Legacy of a Fallen Race. Bear & Company, 1996, 2001.

Collins, Andrew, Gods of Eden, Egypt Lost Legacy and the Genesis of Civilization, Bear & Company, 1998, 2002.

DeLubic, R.A. Schwaller, The Temple of Man, Copyright 1957, 1993, 1998 by Editions Dervy. Copyright 1998 by Inner Traditions International.

Hart. Will, The Genesis Race, Bear & Company, 2003.

Kramer. Samuel Noah, In the World of Sumer, Wayne State University Press, 1986.

Malkowski, Edward F., Before the Pharaohs, Bear & company, 2006.

Marrs, Jim Rule by Secrecy, Harper Collins 2000. Rivers Press, New York, New York, 1995.

O'Brien, Christian and Barbara The Genius of the Few Turnstone Press, 1985.

Sykes. Bryan, The Seven Daughters of Eve. New York Norton & Company 2001.

Temple, Robert, The Sirius Mystery, Destiny Books, 1998.

Tolle, Eckhart, The Power of Now. New World Library 1999

Webre, Lambremont Alfred, Exopolitics, Universebook, 2005, 2002, 2004.

West, John Anthony, Serpent in the Sky, The High Wisdom of Ancient Egypt, The Theosophical Publishing House, 1993.

Zukav Gary, The Dancing Wu Li Master, An Overview of the New Physics, Bantam Books 1979.

Glossary

Adamites—The material sons and daughters, the descendants of Adams and Eves.

Adjuster—The God within.

Amadon—A human descendant of Andon and Fonta who was a loyal associate of Van advocating the rejection of Lucifer Manifesto approximately 200,000 years ago.

Andites—A human race derived from the impregnation of most of the best human strains (especially Nodites) with Adamic life plasma.

Andon—The first male human being killed during an earth earthquake at age 42.

Andonites—The first primitive human beings descended from and including Andon and Fonta.

Avalon—A local universe neighbor of Nebadon our local universe.

Avonals—One of the descending orders of revealed Paradise Sons of God, also known as Magisterial Sons.

Dalamatia—The headquarters city of the Planetary Prince, once situated on the Persian Gulf in Mesopotamia approximately 500,000 years ago. This city was named after Daligastia.

Edentia—Headquarters of the constellation for which our system belongs.

Finaliter—Father-fused beings—the humans' final goal.

Fonta—The first female human being killed during an earthquake at age 42.

Hovona—The central and divine universe.

Jerusem—Headquarters world of our local universe.

Life Carrier—Those who created the seed of life on our planet, and the spirit of God breathed the breath of life into.

Melchizedeks—An order of Higher Beings. One of them, named Machiventa, visited earth during the time of Abraham.

Midwayers—Creatures who appear on most inhabited worlds; they existed and functioned in the realm “midway” between humans and angels.

Morontia—That phase of universe reality between the material and the spiritual realms.

Mota—The wisdom of the morontia level of reality, the mindal mechanism for the comprehension of cosmic meaning and the interrelationship of the universe.

Nebadon—The name of our local universe.

Nodites—Descendants of the rebel members of the Caligastia's corporeal staff who derived their name from their leader, Nod.

Norlatiadek—The constellation to which our earth belongs.

Sangik—The Badonite family, descended from Andon and Fonta, in which the ancestors of the six colored races of Urantia were born in approximately 498,000 B.C.

Salvington—The headquarters sphere of the local universe of Nebadon, personal home of the Creator Son.

Satania—The administrative system of approximately 1,000 inhabitable planets to which our earth belongs.

Seth—The eldest son of Adam and Eve born in the second Garden and founded the Sethite priesthood.

Thought Adjusters—The God within.

Urantia—The name the higher worlds gave our planet around one billion years ago.

Uversa—The architectural and headquarters world of the seventh super universe, Orvonton, to which our universe belongs.

Chapter 1

- 1 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 36, paragraph 1.
- 2 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 58, 4-2.
- 3 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 62, 5.
- 4 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 62, 6.
- 5 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 62, 7.
- 6 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 63, paragraph 2.
- 7 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 63, 7.
- 8 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 112, 5, paragraph 12.
- 9 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 108, 6 paragraph 6.
- 10 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 30, 4, ²sleeping survivors.
- 11 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 30, 4, ¶paradise arrivals.

Chapter 2

- 1 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 108, 6, paragraph.
- 2 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 64, 6, 6 Indigo race.
- 3 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 82, 6, paragraph 2.
- 4 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 32, 3, paragraph 10.
- 5 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 133, paragraph 3.
- 6 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 66, 5, 6 the college of revealed religion paragraph 3.
- 7 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 66, 6, 31 this Supreme Court.
- 8 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 66, 8, paragraph 2.
- 9 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 66, 8, paragraph 4.

Chapter 3

- 3 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 67, 4, paragraph 1.

Chapter 4

- 1 Forbidden Mysteries of Enoch, chapter 15: 1-20, 1983-1992, Summit University Press.
- 2 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 77, 4, paragraph 2¹.

Chapter 5

- 1 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 74, paragraph 1.
- 2 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 74, 2, paragraph 8.

- 3 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 74, 8, paragraph 2.
- 4 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 75, 1, paragraph 6.
- 5 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 75, 3, paragraph 1.
- 6 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 75, 4, paragraph 2.
- 7 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 75, 4, paragraph 8.
- 8 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 75, 5, paragraph 7.
- 9 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 75, 7, paragraph 5.
- 10 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 75, 8, paragraph 7.

Chapter 6

- 2 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 76, 6, paragraph 1.
- 3 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 47, 10, Paragraph 2.
- 4 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 48, paragraph 1.

Chapter 7

- 1The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 78, 1, paragraph1.
- 2 Kramer, Noah Samuel, The World of Sumer, Wayne State University Press, 1986.
- 3 The Bible Unearthed, by Israel Finkelstein and Neil Asher Silberman, Touchstone, 2004
- 4 Best, M. Robert Noah," Ark and the Ziusudra Epic 1999 Enlil Press.

Chapter 8

- 1 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 93, paragraph 1.
- 2 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 93, 2, bottom of paragraph 1.
- 3 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 93, 2, bottom of paragraph 3.
- 4The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 93, 4, paragraph 16.
- 5 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 93, 6, paragraph 3.
- 6 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 93, 9, middle of paragraph 10.

Chapter 9

- 1 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 96, 1, paragraph 2.
- 2 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 96, 4. Paragraph 1
- 3 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation 1955, paper 96, 5, paragraph 6.

Chapter 10

- 1 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 120, 1, paragraph 1.

2 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955. This being appears to be the head of Higher Beings in our solar system, under Michael and Gabriel. The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 119, paragraph 1.

3 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 148, 5, paragraph 2.

4 The Scofield Reference Bible, 1909, 1917.

5 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 149, 2, paragraph 3.

Paul wrote quite a few letters that were not in keeping of Jesus and especially the way he treated women.

6 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, Paper 130, 1, paragraph 2.

7 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 130, 2, paragraph 4.

8 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 36, 2, paragraph 9.

9 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 155, section 5 and 6.

Chapter 11

1 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 137, 4, paragraph 8.

2 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 142, 2, paragraph 1.

3 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, page 1661.

4 Journey to Life, 2011, Infinity Publishing.

5 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 168, 2, paragraph 2.

6 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 168, 2, paragraph 7.

Chapter 12

1 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 177, section 1 paragraph 2.

2 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 177, 2, paragraph 1.

3 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation 1955, paper 178, 1, paragraph 15.

4 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 178, 2, paragraph 1.

5 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 178, 2, paragraph 4.

6 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 178, 2, paragraph

7 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 178, 3, paragraph 2.

8 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 179, 2, paragraph 1.

9 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 179, 2, paragraph 2.

10 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 179, 3, paragraph 3.

11 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 179, 3, paragraph 5.

12 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 179, 3, paragraph 8.

- 13 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 179, 3, paragraph 9.
- 14 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 179, 4, paragraph 1-2.
- 15 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 179, 4, paragraph 6.
- 16 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 179, 5, paragraph 1.
- 17 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 182, 1, paragraph 1-6.
- 18 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 182, 3, paragraph 1.
- 19 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 182, 3, paragraph 2.
- 20 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 183, 1, paragraph 1.
- 21 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 183, 3, paragraph 4.
- 22 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 183, 3, paragraph 5.
- 23 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 183, 3, paragraph 6.
- 24 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 183, 3, paragraph 7.
- 25 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 184, section 1.
- 26 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 184, 3, paragraph 5-15.
- 27 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 184, 5, paragraph 2-7.
- 28 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 185, 2, paragraph 3.
- 29 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 185, section 3.
- 30 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 185, section 5.
- 31 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 185, section 6.
- 32 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 185, section 7.
- 33 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 185, section 8.
- 34 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 186, paragraph 1.
- 35 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 186, section 1.

Chapter 13

- 1 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 188, 2, 2.
- 2 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 188, 4.
- 3 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 189, 2, paragraph 1.

Chapter 14

- 1 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 1, 4, paragraph 1.
- 2 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 107, 1, paragraph 3.
- 3 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 108, 6, paragraph 7.

- 4 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 110, 1, paragraph 6.
- 5 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 110, 3, paragraph 4.
- 6 The Urantia Book, The Urantia Foundation, 1955, paper 110, 7, paragraph 2.